

11/4. 2. 3
2.

THE
B O O K
UPON
THE GOSPEL
AND
REGENERATION.

By JAMES BIRCH, K
AUTHOR OF THE BOOK OF THE LAW AND
CHERUBICAL REASON.

Christ said, "These things have I spoken to you in proverbs:
"The time cometh when I shall no more speak unto YOU in
"proverbs, but I shall shew you PLAINLY of the Father."

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR.

And Sold by T. HERALD, No. 60, Portpool Lane, near GRAY'S INN LANE.

(PRICE 4s.)

B O O K

THE CORPUS

MONUMENTAL



OF THE
GOSPEL,

AND

REGENERATION.

CHAP. I.

NOW, concerning the beginning, or bringing in of the Gospel. It was done by the *Most Merciful* GOD the CREATOR, according to the attribute of his DIVINE MERCY; for, as I have before written, the cherubim was created in reference to God's divine *Justice*; and there was such a quantity of *Justice* given in and to his soul, when he was created, or through his creation, that when he had broke the *pure Law* he was created under, to cast him down from heaven, from the presence of GOD: And when he was transmuted into flesh, and grown to manhood, this *Justice* charged him with breaking the *Law* when he slew his brother Abel. And this *Angel* in *Justice* in the soul of Man is, "the cherubim and flaming sword that turns every way, to keep the *Way* of the *Tree of Life*;" therefore all the seed of Cain that live to maturity, this angel takes place in the soul; and then they are charged with the *Law*, for this law is the law of angels, or of Reason: and further, this internal *Angel* in justice has full power to seal the soul under the power of *Death* and *Hell*, and there keep it. And thus dwells the attribute of GOD's

B

Justice

Justice on the souls of the seed of *Cain* that live to manhood, and charged with the law, which is, to *Love God above all, and your neighbour as yourself.*

Again, the creation and life of *Adam* was human nature, animated with *Divine Faith*, which is the *Divine Nature* of GOD; therefore *Adam* was the Son of God, because his life was of the *Divine Nature*; and he was created under the LAW of *Faith*, which is, "not to *bearken to the voice of Reason*, for the day you do it, *you shall fall under the power of death*," which *Adam* and *Eve* did through temptation; but this death is only temporal. Thus GOD, according to his creation, became a GOD of *Justice*, through the acts of Man and Angel; only *He* is distinguished in this, *He* is God the Creator, and of *Justice*, to the seed of *Cain*. But although *He* was God the creator, and of *Justice*, to the seed of *Adam*, yet to that seed *He* was GOD the FATHER.

Then the glorious Creator thought it good to leave his glorious *Throne of Justice*, and his *Fatherly condition* to the *Elect*, and transmute himself into his own created nature in *Adam*, which was human Nature, animated with divine faith, that fell in *Adam* his own son; and took *His own* part, in *His own* creation; and kept the *Law of Faith*, which no one but the *Fountain of Faith* could do, it being of that harmless innocent nature, and *He* had his portion of temptation and persecution, which ended in death, by or from the hands of the sons of Reason.

Again, I would not have any one think the glorious Divine Majesty came to walk through the moral law, which is cherubical, or of angels; because that is the law of Reason, for "God took not on him the nature *of angels*," which is the nature of Reason, and of consequence not its law; neither had he any thing to do with that law and *priesthood*, for that was given forth by *Moses* who was the *anointed cherubim* according to his inspiration; and that only ends in *death under Justice*:

For

For the LORD GOD of *Heaven* was incapable to take the nature of Reason on him; for if *He* had took that nature on him, which is of the devil, then God and devil would have been one; and God would have been lost in his own works, by their being swallowed up in confusion; therefore them that look for Regeneration and salvation, learn to know what nature God was capable to take on him, that he could redeem. But God took on him his own nature of Faith, which fell in Adam under the power of Death, for hearkening to the voice of Reason, and went through this sore journey of flesh, and never hearkened to Reason, so as to be tempted to evil by it; and in that he kept the law of Faith.

Moreover, the *Merciful Priesthood of GOD* was his *sacred communion*, in the days of old, with the *spirit of Faith* in the souls of his *Elect*, that he himself would become a Son, the *God of Mercy*, and restore them to his *Heavenly Kingdom* by this his divine and powerful act of *Mercy*; and this holy communion, by the spirit of Faith in the souls of the *Elect*, with God the FOUNTAIN of *Faith and Mercy*, far transcends the cherubical inspiration; why? because one ends in *Death under Justice*, and the other leads to *Mercy and Life eternal*: and in this *faithful communion* were the elect of old, at the hour of death, translated from *justice*, to under the MERCY of the SON, to a glorious *Marriage* and resurrection to eternal *Life*. But Enoch, Moses, and Elijah were translated into *Heaven*, but to no higher Glory than that of the *Father*; therefore the Divine Majesty made a spiritual and heavenly compact with Moses and Elias, that they should sit in the *Glory of the Father*, while God himself become a SON; therefore in Psalm cx. and Luke xx. "The Lord said unto my " Lord, sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine " enemies thy footstool." This is relative to the mystical union between God and his Elect, and of Moses and Elias sitting in the glory of the Father and

of justice, while GOD himself become a SON, and they was the *Angels* who had *charge* concerning him. This being accomplished, according to the merciful will of the divine Majesty, then he left the glory of *Justice*, and that of the *Father* to the *Elect*; and transmuted himself into earth or flesh, and was born of Mary a virgin, of the House of Israel; the which I call the *Virgin Daughter of Israel*, who personally bore the Son of God. And this mighty work was done, because the GOD of *Justice* would become the GOD of *Mercy*; and was found a child; and grew to manhood on this earth, to redeem his *Elect*.

Again, He calls himself the SON of MAN, why? because he took the created nature of Adam (on himself) that fell in manhood, and also the *Law* of Faith that Adam was created under; then, according to the spirit and genealogy of Faith, He was enrolled among the seed of Faith, and recorded in holy writ the SON of DAVID and ABRAHAM, yet the very GOD that created *Heaven* and *Earth*. Also it is written, "He came by water and blood," i. e. he became a true SON to the *Power* of the Father, and was subject to circumcision, prayer, baptism, &c. And when He was brought to Jerusalem, to be presented before the Lord, they offered a pair of turtle doves, and two young pigeons, according to the law of Moses; but He being the Son of God, he was SANCTIFIED to God; neither need he be redeemed unto God, for He was born of God. Also he was not born of sin, or of any desire of Reason, but by the pure desire and Act of Faith; but this was suffered to be done, because He was the first-born Son of Israel, to bring in the holy Gospel; therefore turtle doves was offered for Him. And in this he came by water, because he took the fallen nature of Adam on him, and was subject to the *Power of the Father*, i. e. of *Justice*; but this justice extends no further than persecution and troubles in this life, and a temporal death; but he never took the nature of Reason on him, neither had he any thing

thing to do with that *Law* and *Priesthood*, or *Justice* of that law; but to leave it behind him, to the *internal Angel in Justice* in the soul of man.

Further, "When Jesus came from Galilee to Jordan, "to be baptized of John, then John forbid him, saying, *I have need to be baptized of thee,*" (for John's baptism was of water.) But Jesus said, "suffer it so "to be now, for it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness." Then Jesus was baptized of John's baptism, which was the *baptism of water*, therefore *Jesus came by water*, i. e. He came out on the prophecies of the Elect of old, and in the time of the *Law*, when they stood and prophesied before the *Throne*, when GOD was in the condition of the *Father*, which is but as *Water* or *Moon-like glory*, to Faith; for then the *virgin Daughter* of Faith could not bring forth a *son* in Regeneration, until God became a *Son* to his own *Power*, and was baptized with this *Baptism of Water*, (which was equal to the elect being translated from under the *Law*, and united to GOD for CHRIST.) "And when "he came out of the water (of Jordan) then the *spirit of God* descended like a dove and lighting upon "Jesus—and a *Voice* came from heaven." This *spirit of God*, which he received, sent him forth and enabled him to declare his holy Gospel. Further, the *Holy Ghost* and *Voice* from heaven saying, "This is my beloved son in whom I am well pleased," was from *Moses* and *Elias*, who then sat in the glory of the Father; and when Jesus went forth to declare his *holy Gospel*, then to him those *Waters* were turned into *Blood*.

As concerning *John the Baptist*, he was the last and greatest *Prophet* in the time of the *Law*; not that he was a prophet according to the cherubical inspiration, neither did he regard that *Worship* (for, as I have said, it was but the *incense* of Reason) but he was a great prophet in the *spirit and lineage of Faith*, whereby men communed by the *spirit of Faith* with God, and prophesied

phesied of the coming of Christ: And, as I have said, this *sacred communion* with God is entirely distinct from the *inspiration of the Law*, therefore all the Elect of old, and in the time of the Law, and all the *Prophets* of the Law, was called to this *holy communion* with God at times, and so prophesied of the coming of Christ. And *Enoch, Moses, and Elias* was taken from the law; nay, far above the law in spirit, and was in the humble state of *friendship and forgiveness* to the whole world, and in strong *Union* with Faith in the Elect, and also with God relative to his becoming a SON, so that by the power of Faith they could say, "here is CHRIST *come*," then they were *translated* into heaven, and never came back to tell this *Tale*. And they was called to this state, and *brought forth the fruits worthy of repentance*, and forgiveness of sin to *prepare the way of the Lord's coming*; for in this condition of soul, *the ax is laid to the root of the tree*, which brought forth the *true prayer* of Faith, and they received *the grace of God*; then they were translated, to under the mercy of the SON, and could in spirit truly say, Christ is come, then entered into death, in the *Bed of mercy*, therefore this is the true *Baptism of Water*, which is the end of the *Law*; for when the soul received this, the law was ended with him, and Christ appeared in spirit even at the door, for the soul was prepared for his coming.

Again, There was no prophet to preach this righteousness or preparation until *John*, that *the way of the Lord might be prepared*; for John came forth in that very condition of soul, or spiritual inspiration, that the *Prophets* and the *Elect of old* was brought to in spirit, before they was translated into heaven, or died in the *Bed of mercy*, translated to under the mercy of the Son; therefore Jesus said, (Mat. xi. 9.) "But what went ye out to see, a *prophet*? yea, I say unto you, *more than a prophet*," i. e. after the prophets of old had prophesied of the coming of *Christ*, yet there is a *preparation* of soul to meet him in *spirit* as well as in *person*;

person; and IN this condition of soul fit to meet him, is greater than the prophecy OF him, therefore IN this spirit and inspiration from heaven, John came forth GOD's *Messenger to prepare his way*, which no one ever did till John, therefore John's baptism of water is the end of the law, and the next is CHRIST! and that is the *translation! He that hath eyes to see let him see this INTERNAL MYSTERY!* for the external act is past. And Jesus said, "Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John, notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of Heaven is greater than he," (Mat. xi. 11.) because the *spiritual sanctification* of CHRIST is the *kingdom of heaven*, and John required a translation to that himself.

Again, John the Baptist is said to come "in the spirit and power of Elias," (Luke i. 17.) *i. e.* Elias, in his day, prophesied according to the law, which is the *law prophecy*, and that ends in death, *under Justice*. Also he prophesied of the coming of Christ which leads to, and centers in, mercy and life, even through death; and Elias was brought to that condition of soul fit to be translated to see GOD, whereby *the way of the Lord was prepared*, and in this very inspiration or portion of spirit, *John the Baptist came forth in*, to declare or *prepare the way* of the LORD CHRIST, therefore he came in this very spirit of Elias. Further, Elias was translated into heaven, and sits in the glory of the Father, for then CHRIST was on this earth *born a son*; and Elias, who sat in the glory of the Father, inspired John the Baptist, whereby he went forth to prepare the way of the Lord Christ, and for this very cause John came forth in the spirit and *power of Elias*; for when Jesus was here, the Jews questioned him by the prophecy Malichi (ch. iv.) saying, "Elias must first come." Jesus said, "*that* Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him;" and *this* Elias was *John the Baptist*, therefore (Mat. xi. 13, Jesus said,) "for all the prophets and
" the

"the law prophesied until John; and if ye will receive "it, this is the Elias that was to come;" therefore John came forth not only in the spirit of prophecy, *they* prophesied of the coming of Christ; but also in that very condition of soul, as they was prepared to see GOD, and in that he was a *great Prophet*.

Further, John the *Baptist* "preached in the wilderness "of Judea," (Mat. iii.) *i. e.* he *preached* to people whose understanding was *Wild*, they being in the *Wild priesthood* of Reason; neither could any know the power of his preaching until true understanding was given. And John's *preaching* was, "Repentance for the remission of "sins;" and this was his *Cry*, to prepare the *Way* of the LORD, that the soul may be prepared to follow the GOD of *Heaven*, who then was become man, and ready to go forth, and utter the fruits and power of Faith, declare his holy covenant of grace, and redeem his Elect. Also John's heavenly inspiration gave him wisdom to know them, that there was no possibility of *fruits unto repentance* to be brought out of their souls, therefore when the Pharisees and Sadduces come to his baptism, he called them *a generation of Vipers*, and said, "who hath warned *you* to flee from the wrath to "come;" for those men had usurped the *Letter* of the *Prophets*, and by their imagination on that, sat to judge and determine all spiritual causes, and dedicated their *judgment* for God to own as *Truth*; because they said they had *Abraham* to their father, and was *in covenant* with God: For all those great *Men in conceit* on the bare *Letter*, either in the first, second, or *third Dispensation* has more opinion of themselves, than God has of them; and when *Christ* comes either in person, or in spirit, they will find themselves to be most in general cast out; therefore John said unto them, "bring forth "therefore the fruits worthy of repentance; and begin "not to say within yourselves, we have *Abraham* to our "*father*; for I say unto you, that God is able of those "stones to raise up children to *Abraham*," (Luke iii. 8.)

i. e. from common fishermen, whom the rulers thought ignorant, and was as a *stone* in respect to the knowledge of the *faith of Christ*; yet when Jesus uttered his *Voice*, it centered to the womb, or seed of Faith, in the soul of elect man, and quickened the spirit into act, so that they *followed him*, and truly believed him the SON OF GOD; and this is *raising up children unto Abraham of those stones*. Thus Jesus said to Peter, "Thou art Simon the son of Jona; thou shall be called Cephas, *i. e.* by interpretation, a *stone*."

Moreover, John baptised publicans, soldiers, &c. and said, "The axe is laid to the root of the tree; and every tree therefore which bringeth forth not good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire," *i. e.* every soul that Faith cannot be brought out of, sufficient to follow Jesus unto Regeneration, is *cast from the covenant of Grace*, and left under the *internal angel* in justice; therefore when the people asked him, *what they should do?* (Luke iii. 11.) he answered, and said unto them, "he that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat let him do likewise." And unto the Publicans he said, "exact no more than is appointed you." And unto the soldiers he said, "do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages." Now this was to bring the proud, selfish, and lying spirit of Reason down, whereby the soul may be in love and friendship to all; and receive the *warning of the coming of the Lord*, that they may leave the whole world behind, to follow CHRIST, the KING of FAITH, and this was John's preaching *the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins*.

Again, John the Baptist's inspiration was so great, that he had strong communion by the spirit of Faith with him, or them, that sit as God in the *Glory of the Father* in heaven: that he bear witness of Christ who *was* God the Father, *then* become a Son to be the GOD

of MERCY, that all who come into this world the *Seed of Faith* may, by this great Light of Christ, be enlightened into the holy covenant of grace, prepared as a *Bride* to meet the *Bridegroom* for the *Kingdom of Heaven*: Also for Christ's *unbounded mercy*, and his *incomparable love* and *innocence*, John calls him, "the *Lamb of God* that taketh away the sins of the world:" Also saith, "he that cometh after me, is preferred before me;" and (John i. 16) saith, "and of his fullness have we all received, and grace for grace," *i. e.* from the man *Adam* until *John*, the royal *Lineage* of Faith, prophesied of Christ to *come*, and at the hour of death received the fullness of grace from heaven, to prepare the soul to meet Christ, and entered into death with soul and spirit translated, to under the *Mercy of the Son*; then, in this spirit, or inspiration, John came forth and preached repentance to prepare his way.

Further, I would have the Elect to understand, that from *Adam* until *Christ*, Faith that was born from its womb, or seed, in the soul of man, or brought forth into act by the power of God, it was but the *birth of water*; neither was it any more than the *Daughter* of Faith, or the *Virgin Daughter* of Israel according to the internal and spiritual generation or regeneration; for Christ was the *first-born Son of Israel*, who was the SON of FAITH, MERCY, GRACE, and TRUTH, and the BRIDE-GROOM for Marriage with this pure *Virgin DAUGHTER OF FAITH*: And this holy communion, by the spirit of Faith, with God its fountain, is distinct to, and far transcends the cherubical inspiration; therefore John the *Baptist*, saith, "The *law* was given by Moses, "but *Grace* and *Truth* came by Jesus Christ," (John i. 17.) Also John by the power of Faith, "saw the spirit descend from heaven like a dove and abode upon Jesus, and I knew him not; but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, upon whom thou shalt see the spirit descending and remaining,"

"maining, the same is he which baptizeth with the "Holy Ghost." (v. 33.) And when John was speaking concerning his bearing *Witness* of Jesus, John answered and said, "a man can receive nothing, except it "be given him from heaven." Neither *can* any man declare divine truth at this day, except it be given *him* from heaven; and whenever you see the *Dove of Faith* rest in the soul, that is your brother in the true Faith of Christ.

And although *John* had this great *Peace* and *Joy* of soul, and great *Communion* with heaven, yet his *Baptism* was of *Water*; neither was the internal and spiritual state of *John* himself, but at the *Baptism* of *Water*; for his great communion with heaven was with that of the *Father*, which is *Justice*, therefore *John* must be translated, to under the mercy of the *SON*; for when the soul, by the *prayer of Faith*, has waded through the Law internal, and suffered the Wilds and temptations of Reason, and come to this state of soul, the *Baptism of Water*, which is the highest state he ever was at, yet he will and did find those *waters turned into blood*, before he can, or could enter the spiritual waters of the holy covenant of grace, *i. e.* the *WATERS* of *CHRIST*. But this *Baptism of Water* is at the end of the *Law*, nay, above the *Law*, because, by the power of Faith, the soul is brought through that covenant; and this was the state that the elect of old was brought to by the power of Faith, which is the *baptism of water*. And *Christ*, the son of *Man*, according to the royal lineage of Faith, received this baptism of John, and went forth to declare his *holy gospel*, then those *waters were turned into blood* to himself.

Again, John the *Baptist* (Mark i. 7.) preached, saying, "there cometh one mightier than I, after me, "the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop "down to unloose," *i. e.* he was unworthy to *unloose* or declare the holy Gospel of peace and salvation unto the Elect; for Jesus walked through the whole power

of Reason, and *never* hearkened to it, to be tempted by it; and by that he kept the LAW of FAITH, which is the true path of righteousness and peace; and redeemed his Elect, and left the power of Reason behind unto judgment; therefore no one could utter and perform the covenant of Faith and grace, but HE who created Adam, whose life was of Faith; and that was the work of the very God of heaven. Again, Johr said (Mat. iii. 11.) "Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear, he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and fire," *i. e.* when Faith by *prayer* and *divine assistance* from heaven, is brought through the first covenant, to the baptism of water, which is required of Faith to follow the voice of God *there*; then CHRIST, the King of FAITH, takes the soul into his spiritual covenant of grace, and baptizes it with his *holy spirit*; and that is the glorious *Fire* of Faith; then the soul is redeemed and sealed unto LIFE ETERNAL. This John the Baptist saw, but never entered into it, in this life, to *come back*; for John came out *in the spirit and power of Elias*, to prepare *His Way* for those *Waters to be turned into blood*; but he could not *unloose* the footsteps of his holy Gospel, nor *declare his* (spiritual) *generation*, which is *regeneration*; for there must one come out *in the spirit and power of CHRIST* to do that.

C H A P. II.

NOW when Jesus was baptized of John's baptism, and the spirit of God descended in form like a dove (which is the emblem of innocence) and this, that was given Jesus, was to the spirit above measure, in *Lamb-like Innocence, Love, and Mercy*; for as Jesus was born of woman into this world a *Spotless BABE* and grew to manhood,

manhood, he was compelled to receive the spirit of GOD from HEAVEN, to give him spiritual Birth, to go forth and declare his *holy gospel*; and also to be in the obedience of a *true Son* to the *Power* of the Father. Also it is written (Mat. iv. 1.) "Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil," i. e. to be *tempted* of man; for when any comes forth by the *inspiration* of Faith from *heaven*, he has his friends or brethren to seek, which are the elect of God; and until he meets with one or more of his brethren, he is *tempted of the devil*. And further, when any *declaration* comes from heaven, and the *Messenger* utters forth *some things*, there will be men found, that can listen to it, and like it, because they do perceive it will over-top the whole world; and they will *tempt* the Messenger to *fall down and worship him or them*, i. e. the *tempter* will desire the Message or doctrine may be rendered according to his liking; then he will direct it to the people that he may rule over them, and turn the doctrine contrary to the intent of the *Message*, then the Messenger will become a servant to Reason, which is the *devil and tempter*. Also Reason will ask questions from the scripture, or from their imagination, saying, If thou art from God thou can do, or answer this? and here they also *tempt*; but they will not find it to their liking in the end—then they will say he is a false witness or Messenger, and leave him in wrath—then some seek to destroy him, and in time take possession; and others will, at a distance, transform themselves into his language; and in this Reason is a *murderer and thief*.

And this was the very thing with JESUS, who met with a wise man or men, that were Rulers in the *Law of Moses*, and *tempted him* to act according to their liking; and the devil taking him up and setting him on a *pinacle of the Temple*, it was to shew to him the excellence of the *worship* according to the Law of *Moses*, for this worship was greater than any in the world that was public.

public. And further, this worship was ordained of God, and he being the *Son of God*, why should he not bow to it? For if you be the *Son of God*, it becometh you to own and obey the commands of your *Father*, by the *man Moses*—but by *Him* this could not be done; because that worship is but the *incense* of Reason, which to him was a great temptation; but Jesus answered him from the writings of Moses, “thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God,” (Deut. vi. 16.) And when “*Jesus was taken into an exceeding high mountain*, and shewed the “kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them.” This *high Mountain* was the *inspiration* of the Law of Moses, that ruled over the souls and spirits of men throughout the whole world; and if men did but obey that law and worship accordingly, they should have prosperity, as Moses had promised, and that is the *kingdom's glory of this world*; but CHRIST's *Kingdom was not of this world*. Also the *worship of the Law of Moses* ended in death, under *Justice*; but Christ came in *Mercy*, to bring *Life* out of *Death*, therefore could not hearken to Reason the *tempter*, but said it is written, “thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.” (Deut. vi. 13.)

Further, “When Jesus had fasted forty days and “forty nights, he was afterward an hungry,” (Matt. iv. 2.) Now the *fasting* of Jesus was his being tempted to be a servant to Reason, *i. e.* to bow down and worship, and deliver his holy doctrine, as Reason should think right and proper; and this is the great *Wilderness that Jesus was led into by the spirit*, where he was *tempted of Satan*—“and was with the *Wild Beast*,” *i. e.* by the spirit of Reason, he was tempted in some individuals, for he was among his enemies. Now Jesus did not come to call *Reason*, and be a servant to them; but he came to call his *Royal Elect*, which was, *his lost sheep of the house of Israel*, and be a *servant* to them; therefore during the time he was *tempted of Reason*, which was *forty days*, that

that was the *Wilderness* he was in; for the Language, and *temptation* of the spirit of Reason, is a *Wilderness* to the spirit of Faith; and until he had called some of the Elect to himself by his own Voice, which is the utterance of Faith, *he was an hungry in spirit*, for this is the *wilderness* and *hunger* that CHRIST, the KING of FAITH, suffered in spirit. Also the *tempter* seeing him have no one to commune with, in his own spirit of Faith, which was *hunger to Jesus*, he said, "If thou be the Son of God, command that those stones be made bread," *i. e. to command* any man's spirit to be converted to Jesus's liking; for John the Baptist had said, "God is able to raise up children unto Abraham of those stones;" but the *tempter* could not prevail, for Jesus said, "It is written, man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of God, (Deut viii. 3.)" Here Jesus answered Reason from the Book that was given to Reason, and that was to its own condemnation for all those things Moses had given in commandment to the *Children of Israel*.

Note. Of the Devil tempting of Christ, it was a man, or men, that understood the *Law of Moses*, and had a ruling power in that law and priesthood; for this, *understand*, when *the hour of temptation is come*, there always appears him, or them, or that, which is very able to *tempt*.

Also it is written, "Then the devil taketh him up into the Holy City." This *Holy City* was the *given Priesthood* of Reason; and he shewed him the excellence of that worship commanded of God, and there men *must* bring in their oblations, and *see* for refuge; so of consequence all must bow down there, or receive the plagues for disobedience *again*—"and setteth him on a pinnacle of the Temple." This *pinnacle of the Temple* was to shew him the *stay of God's Justice on man*, which is the *height* of that Priesthood; for when man had

had sinned, and brought in the true offering, that incense or prayer ascends to God, and God *would stay* his *Justice* on the soul of man. Now the *Devil* would give Christ that *place*, where he would offer the true incense, or prayer, that would ascend to heaven, for God to stay his justice on the soul of man, that man may have forgiveness, and enjoy the blessings of this life; and in this he would have communion with God. Now this is the *height* of the *given Priesthood* of Reason; and for that, it is called a *Pinnacle of the Temple*, "and as Christ was the *Son of God* he may cast himself down" and take it, seeing it was of God, for he could do no "wrong nor come to any harm, seeing his *angels* had "charge concerning him."

Again, "The devil taketh him into an exceeding "high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of "the world and the glory of them." This *high Mountain* is the *cherubical inspiration*; and the *Kingdoms of the World* is the *Law of Moses*; and the *Glory* of the kingdoms is the *Stay* of God's Justice; for the *law and priesthood* that Moses gave to the Israelites, was that *land or kingdom* that would flow in plenty; for if men do but observe and obey the *Law of Moses*, and when they have sinned, to offer the true oblation or prayer to have God's justice stayed, then the beauty of God's creation, his blessing, and preservation, shine sweetly to and in the soul; but if disobedient, then *Justice* frowns, and will come into act; this all people, nations, &c. are subject to. Then the *Devil* would have made Christ a king or head ruler over the *Law and Priesthood* if he would but *hearken* to him, which made him say, "All "those things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down "and worship me;" but Christ could not, because his *Kingdom was of Faith*. Now this, *understand*, the *wild priesthood* of Reason is a *Desart* to Faith; and the *given priesthood* of Reason, is a *Wilderness* to Faith.

Again:

Again : When Jesus was tempted of the Devil *forty days*, during the time of that temptation, he called no disciple, neither did he any external *miracle*, as you read of, for when the spirit of God descended and rested on Jesus, he was given up to his *own* strength to be *tempted of the devil* ; for no man doth *truly* know the temptation of Reason unto Faith, without the *spirit* of God from heaven ;—therefore as Adam was created with a life of undefiled faith, but, under this law, “ you shall not *hearken* to the voice of Reason,” but when he was left to his created strength, he broke this law, through *temptation*, and fell under the power of death ; and *Jesus* took the fallen nature of Adam on him, and when he received the *spirit from heaven* he was given up to his *own* strength to be *tempted of the Devil* (as afore-said ;) and although (Jesus was) under the power of death through Adam, yet he bore the *forty days* temptation of Reason the devil, and never *hearkened to it* in the least ; for during this time of temptation he called no disciple, nor did any external miracle. Yet his bearing this temptation of Reason, the devil, by his own strength, and never hearkened to it but left it behind him. Now to the spirit of Faith he never did a greater *Miracle* from his going forth until his death, for on this MIRACLE depends the whole power of *Redemption* ! For the *first* man Adam, when he was left to his *created strength*, *hearkened* to the voice of Reason and fell under the power of death, and lost *his Paradise* : But the *second* man Adam, in *fallen* human nature, was left to his *own strength*, and given up to be tempted of the devil, and *never break* the *Law of Faith*, so went through the power of Reason, death, and hell, and gained the *Heaven of Mercy*.

Again it is written (Matt. iv. 11.) “ Then the devil *leaveth* him, and behold angels came and ministered *unto him*,” *i. e.* the devil could not prevail with Jesus to bow down to Reason’s worship, and be a Ruler in

Reason's kingdom, so he *left him* for a season; and the *Angels* that *ministered unto him* were *Moses and Elias*, who sit in the *glory of the Father*. After this, Jesus went forth and declared his *holy Gospel*, and called his disciples, worked miracles, &c. Then Reason sought to entangle him by questions, and overthrow him in persecution, therefore this is the *great Wilderness* that CHRIST the KING of FAITH went through, at the beginning, or bringing in, of the holy Gospel, which is a royal pattern or example to his Elect, who also will be tempted of the devil.

Moreover, any *Messenger* in the covenant of Grace, must be very careful not to hearken to the tempter, nor give way to the temptation on any thing concerning his *Message*—also any elect Being after he has heard the voice of God by his *Messenger*, and the spirit quickened into act, whereby the soul *gathers Truth* from the declaration, and well knows it leads to *Light and Life*; then the *spirit of Reason* in man (which is the grand enemy to man) will *tempt the spirit of Faith* to bow down and worship him, i. e. Reason would take the *Messenger's* language and render it his own way, which is *contrary* to Faith and the *intent* of the Declaration. Thus the *Spirit of Reason* in man will *tempt the spirit of Faith* in man, and, if possible, keep it from the *Communion with God*; for Reason will allure the soul to preach his own way, only to rule over people, and shew forth greatness. But the spirit of Faith seeks to get as near GOD as possible for sanctification, and leave the whole world behind, therefore BLESSED IS THAT SOUL that is not overcome by this *temptation*, for Reason greatly delights to rule over the soul; but Reason *without* man, as well as the spirit of Reason *in* man, will *tempt* the soul to sin. Now that is no more than Reason *tempt* Reason, and that sin, which is the sin of Reason, falls under the moral Law, which is the law of Reason, and the *internal angel* in justice seals and keeps

keeps that nature down in death. But the transgression of Faith for *hearkening* to the voice of Reason, is of more high consequence, because that must come before the *Justice of the Father*, and pass through that to the prerogative of the *Angel of Faith*, which is *Christ the King of Glory*.

C H A P. III.

NOW after JESUS, by the *power* of FAITH, had overcome the *temptation* of the devil, did, by his mighty work or MIRACLE, declare himself worthy in the great *compact of Faith* to go forth and work the *work of redemption*, and after that to open the BOOK OF LIFE unto his royal elect; therefore, as aforesaid, Jesus was *God the Father*, or the *God of Justice*, then become *God the Son*, the *God of mercy* to his elect; and his life and nature is divine faith, by which he was, and is able to accomplish his almighty works. And he took his own created nature on himself that fell in Adam, which was human nature animated with divine Faith, that he may redeem or recover his own children with great advantage (again to himself; for they will experimentally know the power of sin, death, and hell in their own souls, and also the *merciful glorious redemption* from it.

Moreover, there is but *two covenants* either literal or spiritual, *i. e.* the Covenant of the *Law*, and the Covenant of *Grace*; and, as I have said, Moses was the *Anointed Cherubim*, according to his inspiration, and when he uttered and gave forth the law, there was the spirit of Reason in man for Moses to work upon by his declaration, and that very law written in the nature of Reason that Moses gave forth; and the *internal angel*

in justice that would, and truly doth, close with Moses's declaration ; therefore Moses was the *External Angel* of the covenant of the law, and had the spirit of Reason to work upon, according to the cherubim's fall and becoming flesh.

But JESUS being the true *Son of Faith* and Mercy, uttered and gave forth his *Gospel of Mercy*, and his holy *covenant of grace* ; for the voice of Jesus is one utterance, and that was Faith and Mercy to his elect ; and Jesus directed his voice to the womb of Faith in the soul of man, Faith being the created life of Adam ; and this is the *good seed sown into the good ground* ; for as Moses had Reason to work upon, when he gave forth the Covenant of the *Law*—so Jesus had Faith to work upon, when he gave forth the Covenant of *Grace*. Now, on these principles, went forth the declarations of the two covenants ; but in themselves they are as distinct to each other, as life is from death ; and each nature will hear their own *Call*.

Again, JESUS came to call and gather his *lost kingdom, Israel* ; and his kingdom Israel is the sons of Adam, who are the elect, that are scattered throughout the world : and when he had called some of his disciples, and a multitude of people followed, he taught his disciples by his *holy Utterance*, from the essential spirit of Faith, which was in himself, *that* centered to the *womb* of Faith in the souls of his elect, and quickened *it* into act, to bring forth such fruit of Faith, as would follow him up to the *Regeneration* ; and pronounced his own blessing upon it, as in Matthew, fifth chapter—ver. 3. “ BLESSED are the poor in spirit for theirs is “ the kingdom of heaven,” *i. e.* when Faith is quickened into act in the soul, it greatly dislikes the conceited spiritual riches of proud Reason. And further, it finds itself in a fallen state, and in the midst of death and hell ; neither can it get back from whence it came, without Christ's *divine assistance* and influence to help the
the

the soul in Regeneration ; therefore in this *poor spiritual state of soul* will come the *prayer of Faith*, which ascends to heaven.

Ver. 4. "BLESSED are they that mourn, for they "shall be comforted," *i. e.* in the aforesaid *mourning* condition of soul, the prayer of Faith *will be offered*, which is the true *incense* that ascends up to God, and the soul *will receive comfort* from heaven.

Ver. 5. "BLESSED are the meek for they shall inherit the earth, *i. e.* the spirit of Faith is *meekness*, and in *meek and humbleness* of soul will leave the whole world behind to follow Christ in spirit, when He appears on this earth ; also in true prayer will give itself up for Christ's spiritual protection, and all thoughts of a natural living here is left out, for that is of Reason. But *Note* this—that soul whom CHRIST spiritually protects, He also naturally protects, for by his doing the *great* that commands the *less* ; and, according to God's will, that soul shall enjoy things in this life ; for as he has given up his essential efforts of Reason, he will find his support by divine *providence* ; therefore the *meek soul* will enjoy even this *natural Life*, beside *eternal Life* hereafter, because the *Meek spirit* will that Christ shall rule over him.

But, if a Man shall make ever such pretences of his faith and love in the *Gospel* that was declared by Jesus ; or any divine light, or message that Jesus shall be graciously pleased to send from his *Heavenly Throne*, in, or under his spiritual and holy gospel, to invite the soul up to his holy *sanctification* ; and man cannot leave the whole world, with all its folly behind, to follow the voice and divine light of Jesus. *Let* men judge within themselves are they worthy of his salvation ? The spirit saith, *No !* and CHRIST, when on earth, said *No !* for the active spirit of Reason will fill the soul full of fears on the one part, and say, except he use his efforts, the being will be reduced to poverty and shame ;—and on the

the other part, will allure the soul after vain things of this world, whereby they may have honour of men; and this *Ruler* of the soul will keep the being fully employed, and from every *Act of Faith*. Thus Reason will do evil to keep himself from evil, and by this evil he is condemned; and let men think what they will to the contrary, Christ doth not *Rule* over such a being as this.

But more concerning, *Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth*. Now the grand inheritance of *this earth*, is in a *Glorified* body in all *Eternity*; neither can Faith be compleatly *Glorified* without a body of *this earth*; for as the GOD of *Faith* and *Mercy* thought it good to leave his Throne of Glory, and transmute himself into *Earth* or flesh, and by the *meek spirit* of Faith, wade through the powers of Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice, and ascended into *Heaven* with a body of *Earth* or flesh, and is *Glorified* in it, and will *inherit* it in all eternity; So in like manner, by his *Divine Assistance*, will the *meek spirit* of Faith follow Him, and by Him will be raised to glory, and will be glorified in a body of flesh, and like unto God himself will *inherit this earth* spiritualized and glorified in all eternity; therefore this is the grand desirable inheritance of the *earth*, to the seed and spirit of Faith.

Ver. 6. "BLESSED are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled," *i. e.* when Faith is rose from death to life, and the spirit of Faith has received a *Call* from Reason's captivity, and it finds itself in a strange Land, and greatly surrounded with enemies; and will offer its prayer for God's *Divine Assistance*, to help it on in this sore journey of flesh; and when it receives the *heavenly help*, which is the *divine incomes* of the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST, to confirm the soul he is in the *Truth* and *Way* for Heaven. Then this fills the soul with such satisfaction, peace, and joy for a short space, that in remembrance of this, the soul is *Hungering and Thirsting after this Righteousness*

Righteousness, and seeking, by prayer, to get as near Christ, the KING of Faith, in spirit, as possible; and the soul, by the power of Faith, and the divine help of Jesus, *will* be brought up to the *spiritual Birth*, and holy *Sanctification*—then *the soul is filled with the righteousness of Christ*; and that *righteousness fulfills all righteousness*, then enters into death, in the *Bed of Mercy*, to be raised to *Eternal Glory*.

Ver. 7. "BLESSED are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy." Now that faith, which is of the divine nature of GOD, is *Mercy*, and will act merciful, and that is the Faith of CHRIST; and the faith for Christ even in the soul of man; because Christ is the King of Faith and *Mercy*. But if a man is sent forth in the *nether waters*, i. e. the priesthood of Aaron, or of Reason, even in the *Commission of the spirit*, that man comes forth under *Justice*, and acts in the *Justice* of that priesthood; and that man's faith is more in that power he is invested with, than it is of Christ; neither is it properly the Faith of Christ, because HE is the God of *Mercy*. Now such a man must be *spiritually born*, or translated to the merciful Faith of Jesus at his death; or left behind under *Justice*. But, as aforesaid, the Faith of Christ is meekness and *mercy*, and has no joy in the death of a sinner; and its nature is to act merciful to all men in what it can: Also its *prayer* which is the *Incense* that ascends before God, is to be forgiven, as that forgives them that trespass against it. And I know nothing that has trespassed against Faith, but Reason; neither is it possible for Faith to live or die in any anger or dislike to any one, therefore this is the true and merciful Faith of CHRIST, which is his own divine nature; and HE takes it into his divine *Mercy*, and seals it with his own royal spiritual seal for his glorious kingdom.

Ver. 8. "BLESSED are the pure in heart, for they shall see God," which is this, when CHRIST came to

the other part, will allure the soul after vain things of this world, whereby they may have honour of men; and this *Ruler* of the soul will keep the being fully employed, and from every *Act of Faith*. Thus Reason will do evil to keep himself from evil, and by this evil he is condemned; and let men think what they will to the contrary, Christ doth not *Rule* over such a being as this.

But more concerning, *Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth*. Now the grand inheritance of this earth, is in a *Glorified* body in all *Eternity*; neither can Faith be compleatly *Glorified* without a body of this earth; for as the GOD of *Faith* and *Mercy* thought it good to leave his Throne of Glory, and transmute himself into *Earth* or flesh, and by the *meek spirit* of Faith, wade through the powers of Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice, and ascended into *Heaven* with a body of *Earth* or flesh, and is *Glorified* in it, and will inherit it in all eternity; So in like manner, by his *Divine Assistance*, will the *meek spirit* of Faith follow Him, and by Him will be raised to glory, and will be glorified in a body of flesh, and like unto God himself will inherit this earth spiritualized and glorified in all eternity; therefore this is the grand desirable inheritance of the earth, to the seed and spirit of Faith.

Ver. 6. "BLESSED are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled," i. e. when Faith is rose from death to life, and the spirit of Faith has received a *Call* from Reason's captivity, and it finds itself in a strange Land, and greatly surrounded with enemies; and will offer its prayer for God's *Divine Assistance*, to help it on in this sore journey of flesh; and when it receives the *heavenly help*, which is the *divine incomes* of the HOLY SPIRIT of CHRIST, to confirm the soul he is in the *Truth* and *Way* for Heaven. Then this fills the soul with such satisfaction, peace, and joy for a short space, that in remembrance of this, the soul is *Hungering and Thirsting after this Righteousness*

Righteousness, and seeking, by prayer, to get as near Christ, the KING of Faith, in spirit, as possible; and the soul, by the power of Faith, and the divine help of Jesus, *will* be brought up to the *spiritual Birth*, and holy *Sanctification*—then *the soul is filled with the righteousness of Christ*; and that *righteousness fulfills all righteousness*, then enters into death, in the *Bed of Mercy*, to be raised to *Eternal Glory*.

Ver. 7. "BLESSED are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy." Now that faith, which is of the divine nature of GOD, is *Mercy*, and will act merciful, and that is the Faith of CHRIST; and the faith for Christ even in the soul of man; because Christ is the King of Faith and *Mercy*. But if a man is sent forth in the *nether waters*, i. e. the priesthood of Aaron, or of Reason, even in the *Commission of the spirit*, that man comes forth under *Justice*, and acts in the *Justice* of that priesthood; and that man's faith is more in that power he is invested with, than it is of Christ; neither is it properly the Faith of Christ, because HE is the God of *Mercy*. Now such a man must be *spiritually born*, or translated to the merciful Faith of Jesus at his death; or left behind under *Justice*. But, as aforesaid, the Faith of Christ is meekness and *mercy*, and has no joy in the death of a sinner; and its nature is to act merciful to all men in what it can: Also its *prayer* which is the *Incense* that ascends before God, is to be forgiven, as that forgives them that trespass against it. And I know nothing that has trespassed against Faith, but Reason; neither is it possible for Faith to live or die in any anger or dislike to any one, therefore this is the true and merciful Faith of CHRIST, which is his own divine nature; and HE takes it into his divine *Mercy*, and seals it with his own royal spiritual seal for his glorious kingdom.

Ver. 8. "BLESSED are the pure in heart, for they shall see God," which is this, when CHRIST came
to

work the Redemption, and declare his holy Gospel, he directed his voice to the womb of Faith, in the soul of man, and quickened it into act, whereby the virgin daughter of Faith is born, and she is very eager to follow the BRIDEGROOM, which is CHRIST, up to the holy and spiritual marriage with him ; and her travel is not only through the external wilderness of this world, but the internal wilderness, which is the temptation of Reason within, and offers the prayer of Faith ; for this is the spiritual travail through Justice to Mercy. And as the declaration of the *Holy Gospel* is the fruits of Faith, and Faith is very desirous to be master of the soul to follow Jesus *in* the fruits of Faith, which will be done according to its ability, by *Prayer*, and *divine assistance* from HEAVEN ; then that man's heart becomes *pure* by Faith, and will be born in spirit to the *Seal* of the LIVING GOD, and *see the face of God* in his glory, under the attribute of his divine *mercy*, and live. But no man can *see the face of God* in his glory and live, under the attribute of *justice* ; therefore it is by the fruits of Faith, that the heart is made *pure to see God*, in his glory and live, and not the righteousness of the law ; but however let the soul be productive of the fruits of Faith, which is the *great* and the *least*, will follow.

Ver. 9. " BLESSED are the peace-makers, for they " shall be called the children of God." Faith is *Peace* ; but as it *bearkened* to Reason, and fell under its power, it is much perplexed with it here in this life, at times ; but by its *Prayer* and *divine assistance* from *Heaven*, it will become the *Essential Life*, or *Soul of Man*, for the resurrection unto Life Eternal : And even for all the efforts of Reason, Faith will act in the soul, when it is risen from death to life, and grow strong ; then it flows forth with *peace*, meekness, love, mercy, charity, &c. and will seek to make the *peace* of Christ, and for Christ, among his brethren, to the utmost of its power, for

for Faith is so harmonious in itself, and flows with such love, that were it possible, he would convert the souls of his brethren to his own likeness, whereby it may enjoy the sweet innocent *peace* of Faith.

Again, CHRIST is the grand *Peace-maker* of all to his Elect; because the very God who created left his *Glorious Throne*, and became a Son, to be the King of PEACE and Mercy to his Elect; and called them from the bonds and contentions of Reason, to his own *Peace*, which is the *Peace* of Faith; and also by his death and resurrection, will bring them through death to everlasting life, to enjoy the glorious *peace* of Faith, in his glorious kingdom, in all eternity; therefore Faith, when enlightened from heaven, will seek the *Peace* of Faith for his brethren, and to make it among them; then in that he *follows Christ*, and is a *Child of God*.

Ver. 10. "BLESSED are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven," *i. e.* Faith is of that innocent lamb-like nature, that it will leave the whole world behind to follow its God. Also the nature and voice of Faith, is so contrary to Reason, that it cannot understand it; yet Reason will find it superior to itself, and cannot tell how, for by the innocent language of Faith, Reason will find itself condemned. Then Reason will tempt Faith to worship him, and be in his kingdom; but when Reason cannot prevail, he will conceive anger, and call Faith a liar, but the lie is in himself. And when he asks his cunning questions, the answer of Faith is to Reason's condemnation; then Reason will see there is a spiritual kingdom coming distinct to his own, and will condemn it for the kingdom of darkness, as his own is; then Reason will *persecute Faith for his righteousness*; for the *righteous* fruits of Faith is acceptable to CHRIST, and not the pretended *righteousness* of the law; but let the soul produce the fruits of Faith, and he will be more *righteous* in the law. But it is the spirit of Faith, which is of the divine nature of Christ,

can bear the persecution from the spirit and power of Reason, why? because when it is rose from the dead, and receives a Call from heaven, it will follow that Call through all the powers of Reason, without murmur, to get to its fountain from whence it came, which is done by the dint of *prayer and patience*, then they are found worthy of the KING of FAITH, and by him are given *spiritual Birth* into his holy covenant of grace, and sealed for the kingdom of heaven. For mind this, the promise of eternal life is only to them that hold out to the *End*; and holding out to the end, is to be approved of by the divine MAJESTY.

Ver. 11. "BLESSED are ye when men shall revile "you, and persecute you, and say all manner of evil "against you, falsely for my sake." Now Reason will soon be angry with Faith; for when any *Message* comes from heaven, the nearer the *Messenger* is in spirit to Christ, the more angry is Reason; for the sacred divine Truth of Jesus, appears blasphemy to the spirit of Reason; and the *Messenger* is condemned for blasphemy by the spirit of Reason; and all the Elect that follow witnessing to the truth of the declaration, and bringing forth the fruits of Faith unto God, they also will have the mock and jeers of Reason, and be spoke evil of; for the lying envious spirit of Reason cannot speak the truth concerning Faith; but this always was when the voice of God was on earth, and always will be; therefore blessed is he that hath Faith and patience to overcome those things, it being the works of Faith to follow CHRIST, and his reward is the KINGDOM OF HEAVEN.

C H A P. IV.

AGAIN, Those fruits of Faith is what Christ came to seek, and bring out of the souls of his Elect, whereby Faith may grow strong, and become the essential life or
soul

soul of man in regeneration to the holy covenant of grace and mercy: And this is the *light* of Faith that *shines in good works even before men*, that God the *Father*, or the God of justice, is *glorified* in becoming the God of mercy, to the soul that is productive of the righteous fruits of Faith.

Moreover Jesus said (Matt. v. 17.) "Think not that I am come to destroy the law and the prophets, I am come not to destroy but to fulfill;" *i. e.* this, Christ took on himself the law of Faith, which is, *not to hearken to the voice of Reason*, and he fulfilled that law, and in that he fulfilled all, to redeem his Elect; for *God took not on him the nature of angels*, which is Reason; and of consequence not that law: Therefore whosoever thinks Christ took on him the moral law to keep that, are greatly mistaken, for he had nothing to do with it, but to leave Reason behind, under it, unto judgment.

Further, If CHRIST had not come, Moses's law would have ended in death; but Christ went through the power of death into a merciful and glorious life, and gained to himself the power of a resurrection, to raise his Elect from death to a new and glorious life, and be glorified with the glorious *fire of Faith* to live in *HIS royal presence in all eternity*: Thus the coming of Christ will take men from time to eternity; which also brings punishment on the souls and bodies of the reprobate in all eternity, for the internal angel in justice has full power to seal the soul under death, and there for ever keep it in the second death.

Also when CHRIST was on earth he owned the law to be given of GOD to *Moses*, and *God spake to Moses in the Bush*; then by his death, and Resurrection, he caused justice (according to the law of Moses to take place in eternity; and in this *Christ fulfilled that Law*, because through him the justice of that law takes place in eternity: Therefore Jesus said, "Till heaven and earth pass, one jot, or one tittle, shall in no wise pass from the law till all be fulfilled," *i. e.* them that are

left behind, by the holy spirit of Jesus, the *Law is fulfilled* in them in *eternity*; and them that follow Jesus in spirit, the *law is fulfilled* in them in *Time*; because they must come through it in all obedience to that *Law and priesthood*: Henceforth the *Elect* may know the way to *Mercy* is through *Justice*; neither can any one be truly convinced of the declaration of mercy, but must know the power of justice within themselves, therefore it is from the righteous *fruits of Faith*, that proceeds all true obedience to God (according to his divine justice) and the true *Prayer* of Faith, for his divine Mercy, by which he is graciously pleased by his *divine assistance* from HEAVEN, to bring the soul through *Justice*, and give him *spiritual Birth*, and regenerate him to his holy covenant of grace and *mercy*, and seal him for his GLORIOUS KINGDOM; then the law is *fulfilled* in that soul, because he is passed from death to life; and the first *heaven and earth is passed away*, and the soul is entered into the *new heaven* of grace, even in this earthly body, and dies in the *bed of mercy* to be raised to glory, and this is the *righteousness that exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and pharisees*; for CHRIST said, "Except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the scribes and pharisees, ye shall in no case enter the kingdom of heaven."

Again, The *Fruits of Faith* is mercy and love; but the *Fruits of Reason* is anger and hatred, and according to his own evil spirit, will give judgment, therefore Christ forbids any *anger* to be amongst brethren: and also says, that "Whosoever shall say thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire," *i. e.* to condemn the *prayer* of obedience, and the *divine truth* of Christ as *foolishness*, and the man a *fool* for following it.

Further, If a man shall profess any letter or declaration, and *Anger* dwells in his soul, that man never has offered the *true incense* of Reason, to have God's justice stayed on himself; than much less to have offered the *prayer of Faith*; for where *Anger* dwells that soul has not

not been accepted of GOD ; nay, never will, without he can put anger away free of excuse, and truly repent of that evil : Also Reason will conceive evil against his brother, and this evil will grow strong, until it comes forth in judgment, unto condemnation against his brother : for Reason ignorantly thinks the evil is in his brother, but all the while the evil is in himself, for Reason is sealed under death unto wrath, by the internal angel in justice, and from this spirit comes out his wrathful condemnation : Therefore the same degree of judgment he metes to his brother, is measured to him again ; for Reason can bring forth nothing but spiritual lies which declares his own condemnation before the holy spirit ; therefore Jesus said (Matt. xii.) “ O generation “ of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things, “ for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth “ speaketh.”

Again, Jesus in his lamb-like innocent, merciful, and faithful utterance of his holy *Gospel*, teaches his disciples the pure innocent acts, or *fruits of Faith* by which the soul is to enter the *Kingdom of Heaven* : Therefore He said to his disciples, “ Swear not at all, neither by heaven for it is God’s throne, nor by the earth for it is “ his footstool ; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city “ of the great King,” *i. e.* men should make no private resolutions, or public declarations of what they would do in time to come, seeing they have it not in their power to perform any thing but evil ; also Reason by his *imagination* on the *bare Letter* of the Scripture, will declare or *swear* his is the true Faith that leads to God, and *teach and preach* the salvation of God and of Christ, by or according to this *Imagination*, and say it is of God ; and some has said from this spirit they had or have the *Assurance* of eternal life, which is *swearing falsely in the name of God* : Further Reason will *Vow* certain things which tends to evil, and bring themselves under the law, and if he perform them he will reap the evil, and if he do not, he is found a liar by the angel
of

of his own law before whom he *sware*: (This man will do, yet may scruple to declare what he knows to be truth, before a magistrate) Or in any thing that man shall say to himself, or of himself, what he will do on the morrow, is evil; for he has no power to perform, and even if permitted, it will attend to some evil to himself; therefore, it is best for Reason not to *swear*, nor make *Vows*, but leave the current of life to the will and power of God; for in the sight of God, this is *swearing by yourself*, which is equal with, or worse than *prophane swearing*, which must be discommended; for "man cannot make one hair of his head white or black." Therefore Jesus said (Matt. v. 37.) "But let your communication be yea, yea, and nay, nay; for what-soever is more than those cometh of evil:" *i. e. elect men* must hearken to Jesus, and that will bring the soul to an innocent *Child-like* condition, for Faith to be *born* from its womb, to produce its righteous fruits to follow him; then they must be taught by him, and not by emulation; for if they put themselves forward, it is by the spirit of Reason, and that act and communion is of evil.

Further, (as aforesaid) God left his glorious throne of justice, and became flesh to become the *God of mercy*; and his holy covenant is grace and *mercy*, and the *fruits* of Faith is *mercy*: Therefore HE said unto his disciples "They should not resist evil," for if Reason would, let him *smite both cheeks*; and "If man would *sue at law* and take thy coat, let him have cloak also, and give to him that ask, and him that would borrow, turn not away, and love your enemy, for if we love one another only, the world do the same;" therefore (Luke vi.) Jesus said, "But I say unto you *which hear*, love your enemies, do good for them which hate you: Bless them that curse you, and pray for them that *despitefully* use you," for the mighty *merciful* Act of Jesus was to call his *Elect*, and redeem them to himself, then by those *fruits* they must follow him; and Reason
which

which cannot follow, is left behind under *Justice*; therefore would not hurt *them* in this *Life*, which is their *kingdom*; and this is according to his divine nature which is *Faith and Mercy*.

Moreover, Jesus said to his disciples, "When thou dost thy alms, let it be in *secret*," for God knoweth the *secret* charitable heart through Faith, and he will reward them: Therefore, *Blessed* is that man that is charitable for Faith's sake, for he will be rewarded from *Heaven*: Now, when the fruits of Faith is active in the soul it ascends to God in *secret*, therefore Christ said, "Your Father knoweth what things ye need before ye ask him:" And HE also taught the true *Prayer of Faith*, which is this, "OUR FATHER which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name," *i. e.* Faith directs its prayer to *Heaven* for God's *divine assistance* to help the spirit of Faith through the powers of Reason, Sin, Death, and Hell, that his holy name may be glorified by the fruits of obedience, and the righteous fruits of Faith in the Elect, and that the kingdom of Christ may shine in the *glory of mercy*: "Thy kingdom come," *i. e.* God's kingdom; for Christ is *mercy*, which Faith prays in spirit it may come to: "Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven," which is, Faith truly submits in *prayer* to the *prerogative will* of GOD, to be disposed of as HE is graciously pleased: "Give us this day our daily bread," *i. e.* he will be graciously pleased to send his inshining light from *heaven*, which is spiritual *bread* to Faith; and also to give natural *bread*, or if he please the *bread* of affliction: "And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors," *i. e.* Faith is of that meek innocent nature, that it *prays* for its own *forgiveness*, as that *forgives*, then of consequence it is in *Love, Mercy, and Charity* with the whole world: "And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil," *i. e.* let us not be carried away by the *temptation* of Reason into his kingdom, *for* his kingdom, and there perish *with* his kingdom, now this *evil* Faith
prays

prays to be *delivered from* : “ For the kingdom of God “ is the kingdom of mercy, power, and glory, for ever, “ *Amen.*” This is the true *prayer* of Faith ; and if it is but *newly born* from its womb, the motion or desire of the spirit is this, “ Lord, *I pray* thee, help me to “ *pray.*” Now the spirit of Reason may repeat this Prayer from the *Letter*, but that *Incense* never can ascend to the divine Majesty, Why ? because it is contrary to its nature : But from the motions or the desires of the spirit in the *secret Closet* of the soul is the *prayer of Faith*, which is the *golden incense* that ascends up to heaven before God.

Again, By these *fruits of Faith* the soul follows Christ, who came to quicken Faith, and gather his Elect for his glorious kingdom ; and he went through the powers of Reason and never hearkened to it, but *left* it behind in its vain glory unto judgment : So a man must *leave* the whole world to *follow Jesus*, as *one given to HIM out of the world* ; and his prayer of Faith ascends before the DIVINE MAJESTY ; and his *treasure is laid up in HEAVEN*, where no *thieves can break through and steal* ; for he is a *wise man* in Faith, who has *built his House on a Rock* : but the world must be *left behind* for this ; therefore Jesus said (Luke xiv.) “ If a man come unto me, and hate not his father and “ mother, and his wife and children, and brethren and “ sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my “ disciple.”

Again, When the *spirit of Reason* rules over the soul of man, he will keep the man in his own kingdom let him profess either first, second, or *third Declaration*, and Reason will fill the soul so full of employ after the folly of *this World*, and with covetousness to uphold *this Kingdom*, to live after the manner of Reason’s fashion, that the man is an intire slave if he did but know it :—Also this spirit will *allure* the man in this *busy World*, that scripture and religion is become hardly worthy the name of a servant, and the *lying spirit* of Reason

Reason is become his *Priest*, and will fill the soul with so many excuses, that there is little else to be found in him.

Further, *Reason* will keep the soul in spiritual drunkenness, so that he shall wallow in the sottish mire of this world, that when the soul is invited to worship God, or to the kingdom of heaven, Reason, he is so full of business in this world that he has not time to come, therefore will *excuse* himself, and seek his peace in that *Excuse*; and if he is shewed the *Letter*, or told the *Word*, he will say it is right and true, but instead of "striving to enter in at the gate," he will fly back to his own Center, like unto a bended spring when let go, and say "he has great incumbrance in the world, and must do it because it is his duty," and I say let him; therefore let Reason do his duty in and for his *Kingdom*, and Faith do his duty for his *Kingdom*: Now this is the *right Eye*, which is the *Eye of Reason* in the soul, and Man is born with this *Eye* open, and tutored in and with the sight of this *Eye*, therefore it is called the *right Eye*; but when the *Voice of God* is active on this earth, it calls to *Faith*, and quickens that into *act*, which is another *Eye*, and this *Eye* by divine assistance from HEAVEN, is to *light* the soul into the Kingdom of *Grace and Glory*: And this *Eye* is to become the essential *light, life, and soul*, to him that is regenerated, because this *light, life, and soul*, is to be raised to Eternal Glory; therefore "if the *right Eye* (which is Reason) is offensive it must be plucked out and cast away, "and the right hand also (which is the same meaning) "for it is more profitable for that to perish, than body "and soul, to be cast into hell:" Therefore Jesus said (Matt. vi.) "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also: the *Light* of the body is the *Eye*, if "therefore thine *Eye be single*, thy whole body is full "of *Light*; but if thine *Eye be evil*, thy whole body "shall be full of *darkness*; if therefore that *Light* in "thee be *Darkness*, how great is that darkness." Thus you may see the difference between the *Eye of Reason*, and the *Eye of Faith*, and what each *Eye* looks after.

C H A P. V.

NOW when Jesus declared his *holy Gospel*, his fame spread abroad, so that multitudes of people came, and many followed him, for HE declared the *Peace of Salvation* unto his *Elect*; and also called them out of *captivity*, "heal the sick, make the lame walk, the dumb speak, the blind see, raise the dead, &c." *This* he did by the power of Faith: And the Elect of Old was very desirous to live in those days; and I do confess it was a release to the seed of Reason that followed, for this is to be understood, that many followed for the outward *Word* or *Declaration*, for Jesus called them from the outward *ceremonial Worship*, according to the *Law* which was a burthen, for they was obliged to bring in their offerings, oblations, and tythes, according to the *Law of Moses*, and attend to, and obey the *Ceremonies*, but by following of Jesus they was eased of that burthen, and left to their own will.

And Reason when it had transformed itself to follow Jesus it was suffered to preach the word, nay, even do *Miracles* in the *Name* of JESUS, as Judas did; for Reason is very fond of subjecting the devil, by the *power of the Word* in another; and at the same time knows not the *Actions* of his own: Also Reason is very fond of external miracles, and more so when he bear the name of a Disciple of him that works them; yet Reason would oftentimes shew himself to Jesus by coveting and murmur: But as *Jesus* came in *Mercy*, his most *merciful spirit* suffered them to follow the *outward Word*, for when John said "Master we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and he followed not us, and we forbade him, (Mark ix. 39.) But Jesus said "Forbid him not, for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speak evil of me; for he that is not against us is on our part." *This*, is according

according to the *outward Word* which was to be declared abroad ; and the seed of Reason that followed Jesus for the *outward word and Miracle* would not be against him, so as to persecute him, nor betray him, until his time was come, and so far they were on *his part*.

Further, Jesus being in *Mercy*, had compassion on the *seed of Reason*, whenever any of them found they were wanting his help, and in obedience to him, come and asked him to do it, for his fame spread abroad by the *glorious miracles* he did, that many who were infirm were desirous to be healed ; and as he had healed so many, it did in great measure take off doubt ; therefore (Mark ix.) when " the man brought unto Jesus his " son, which had a dumb spirit, and Jesus asked the " father how long since it came upon him ? and he said " from a child, (ver. 22.) but if thou canst do any " thing, have compassion on us, and help us : Jesus " said unto him, *if thou canst believe*, all things are " possible to him that believeth : And the father of the " child said, with tears, Lord, I believe, help thou mine " unbelief ;" which was a prayer of obedience ; and JESUS had compassion on the father and child, and he was healed by the *merciful power* of CHRIST : Also (Luke xvii.) where *ten men met Jesus who were Lepers, and they lift up their voices and said* " Jesus, Master, " have mercy on us ;" and he said unto them " Go shew " yourselves to the priest," and as they went they were cleansed, and one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice Glorified God, and he fell down on his face at his feet giving him thanks ; and he was a Samaritan ! and Jesus said " were there not ten " cleansed, but where are the *nine* ? there are not found " that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger." Now him that returned to give thanks and glory to God was an *Elect* being, but the other *nine* you may judge who they was by what is written

Again, JESUS became a true son to the power of the father, and had spiritual communion in the mystical

union with *Moses* and *Elias* (who sit in the glory of the Father) unto which he directed his prayer for heavenly assistance, to wade through the powers of Reason, Hell, and Death, and also at times to do his powerful miracles, wherein God was glorified in his *Son*, as may be seen when he raised *Lazarus* from death to life ; and also when his disciples asked him *why they could not cast out the dumb spirit in the child?* (Mark ix. 29.) and HE said unto them, " this kind can come forth by " nothing but by prayer and fasting," *i. e.* by the true *prayer of Faith* to heaven for *divine Assistance*, and patiently waiting until it comes.

Further, the miracles of *Jesus* was done by the power of *Faith* ; and as men was external healed by the power of *Jesus*, it was to shew forth the internal soul and spirit of *Faith* by him would be healed, and raised to glory for the *Kingdom of Heaven* ; therefore *Christ's* Declaration and Miracles had a two-fold operation, *i. e.* the *outward* declaration and miracle is taken by the seed and spirit of Reason, and with it they will go their own way ; but the *internal* miracle and declaration takes the seed of *Faith* into the royal Priesthood of *CHRIST*, and then to his glorious kingdom ; (see Luke viii. 2.) where you may find it written, " *Mary, called Magdalen, out of whom went seven devils ;*" this woman was not only externally healed to the sight of men, but became internally healed to the sight of God also, because she followed him in person and in spirit, for she did believe to his liking ; this is one instance to the seed of *Faith* ; and the *nine* lepers who was externally healed, and went their way, not returning thanks to him that healed them, is one instance to the seed of Reason.

Yea, The miracles of *JESUS* was very great and glorious, and done by the power of *Faith* and *Prayer* ; for many of the seed of *Faith* was healed by the power of those miracles ; yet the *external* miracles in themselves was more to convince, or rather condemn, the seed of Reason, than it was to redeem the Elect ; for if the
Elect

Elect had been externally healed only, they never had been redeemed ; for in the miracles they was but made whole according to creation, which plainly shews HE was God the Creator : And raising the dead was bringing the Being back to this life, and must die again ; But this also shews he had power to raise Faith from death to life in his royal priesthood, and would have power to raise the dead for eternity ; therefore in all those miracles GOD is greatly *glorified* in his SON, because Christ came in *Mercy*, and all that came to him, and would be healed, he healed by his declaration and miracles ; and the seed of Faith followed in spirit to be internally healed, by the power of his internal miracle, for the sake of the Kingdom of HEAVEN—but the seed of Reason would be no more than external healed, and went their own *Way in Spirit*, for if they followed in person, it was for the sake of the *outward Word* and miracle.

Moreover, I shall mention a miracle of JESUS, (Matt. xiv.) Where *great multitudes followed him out of the cities on foot*, “ And Jesus went forth and saw a great “ multitude, and was moved with *compassion* towards “ them, and healed their sick ; and it was evening and “ in a desert place, and his disciples said send the multitude away that they may go and buy victuals, but “ Jesus said, they need not depart : Then JESUS “ commanded the multitude to sit down, and he took “ the two fishes and five loaves, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to “ his disciples, and his disciples to the multitude, and “ they did eat and were filled, and them that eat were “ five thousand men, beside women and children, and “ the fragments that remained was took up and filled “ twelve baskets.” This great miracle was to shew forth the power of the acts, and declaration of Jesus, to his Elect ; for although Faith fell under the power of death, and the soul actuated by the spirit of Reason, and was under that law ; yet Christ would raise Faith from
from

from death to life, and bring it through those powers, and regenerate it to his own likeness : For JESUS came and directed his voice to the womb of Faith, and called his *Elect* to himself, and quickened the spirit of Faith into act, and offered up his prayer before the THRONE for *them*, and redeemed *them*, and regenerated THEM to his holy covenant of grace, and sanctified *them* to enter his *Glorious Kingdom* ; for when Jesus declared his *Holy Gospel*, and made his gracious promise to his *Elect*, and worked his glorious miracles, and uttered his holy parables, to display the likeness of the *Kingdon of Heaven*, this declaration is made with words and *outward* shew, but the *internal* and spiritual help of Christ, according to the word, by the mystical union of Faith comes to the *Elect*, and this divine assistance of Christ comes from heaven, and is that which taketh the soul to his spiritual and holy covenant of grace ; then the soul by the *lively union* of Faith, with the *spirit of Christ* eats of the TREE OF LIFE, and is filled with the righteousness of Christ, for the Kingdom of Heaven ; but the *Letter or outward Word* is left behind as a *fragment*, and given to the *Seed of Reason*, and that will keep them fully employed on a spiritual account.

Also the *twelve Apostles* went in the spirit and power of Christ, to preach the glorious acts and redemption of Christ, and called the *Elect* to his Faith, whereby he was graciously pleased by his holy spirit to confirm the soul according to their preaching, and not only so, but also to lead the soul through the wiles and temptations of Reason, and take the soul into the glory of his *divine Mercy* ; but the *outward Word* or letter is left behind as a *fragment* :—CHRIST said, “ his words are “ *spirit and Life*,” but any one to know the *spirit* by the word spoke must be in the mystical union, and spiritual compact, and priesthood of Faith with Jesus, to be taught by Jesus ; for the *outward Word* or bare letter is but a *fragment*, what the spirit hath left behind : therefore the heavenly doctrine that Jesus gave to the
twelve

twelve Apostles was to call the *Eket* to Jesus in Spirit, and through Him they did eat, and by Him they were filled, (for the Kingdom of Heaven) with his glorious internal Miracle of redemption and sanctification; and the outward Word or letter is the fragment that filled twelve baskets, answerable to the twelve Apostles, and was given to the seed of Reason that they might hand about to each other, and make what merchandize they can of it, for let there be seven baskets or one basket, it is the same thing in consequence.

Again, The Letter of the Apostles declaration of Jesus was given unto the Gentiles, for the Jews could not enjoy it without transforming themselves from one letter to the other; and when done they was eased of the laborious ceremonies and oblations according to law; and all others that was transformed into the Apostolical Letter they may read of CHRIST, and he forgive sin, and many men has gone forth as teachers of this Letter by their own imagination, and has subjected men, and got great gain; also many men has dissented from the first established opinion, which was the Church of Rome, and others has dissented from them, so that it is branched forth, or taught according to the different opinions of men, for there is a seeming scope in the Letter, and every man will ground his judgment on different parts or sayings, but all in the wrong; for no one can tell the mind of God in the Scriptures without he is inspired by JESUS CHRIST from HEAVEN, for it is not his reading them over, and the spirit of Reason rising into emulation, and then call that spirit, the spirit of God, for there he is found a liar before the internal angel in justice, for that is the spirit of the devil: Now the spirit of God guides to Light and Life, and the spirit of man guides to death and darkness; therefore all offerings which is prayer, that is made to Christ by the spirit of Reason, is an abomination to him; but, as I said, the Letter is but a fragment or Garment which the spirit left, and those men whose judgment is grounded on

on different sayings in the *Letter*, they all hold forth and Cry, *here* is salvation, which is casting lots upon the *Letter*, as they did at Christ's crucifixion (Mark xv. 24.) "And when they had crucified him, they parted his *Garments casting Lots* upon them, what every man "should take;" and this thing the seed of Reason do by the *Letter* at this day.

Further, When Jesus was on earth, as I said, he came in *Mercy*, and his spirit is *merciful* for many followed him, and they brought them that were diseased (Matt. xiv.) "and besought him that they might only touch "the hem of his garment; and as many as touched "were made perfectly whole," for they drew *compassion* from Jesus, and *Virtue* went with compassion to heal the *diseased*: Now when any one come to Jesus that was *diseased* and desired to be healed by *touching the hem of his garment*, it is no more than being made whole according to creation and Generation; but to be *healed or made whole according to Redemption*, you must eat his FLESH, and drink his BLOOD; therefore in the day of accompt, there will be found a great difference between touching the hem of his *Garment*, and eating his *Flesh* and drinking his *Blood*; for I would have men *understand* that all who were called by the declaration of Jesus, did not work the *Works of Faith*, neither will they all enter into the *Marriage Feast*. (Matt. ix. 37.) "Then saith he unto his disciples, the harvest is truly "plenteous, but the labourers are few;" and (xxii. 14.) "For many are called, but *few* chosen."

C H A P. VI.

AGAIN, Those of the *seed of Reason that followed Jesus was on his part*, so far as not to persecute him for his declaration; and there was others that was taken with *Anger against him*, and sought to entangle him in his

his words, persecute him, and take his life; *thus* the declaration of JESUS had a two-fold effect on the *seed of Reason*; some was taken with *Emulation* and others with *Anger*; for when Jesus called his Elect, by the voice of Faith and Mercy, it being so contrary to the dark superstitious conceived notions of Reason on the scripture, that it set it on fire in envy and wrath, &c. that Reason became greatly troubled in the soul, for all their ruling power, and joy they had in the worship of the *Law*, received such a wound, that it never could be healed for man to have common peace again, but to transform himself into the *Letter of Jesus*.

Now when *Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship to go before him*, "and the ship was tossed in the sea for the wind was contrary; and about the fourth watch of the night, they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and they were troubled, but Jesus answered, it is I, be not afraid." This *Miracle* of JESUS, his *walking on the Sea*, is to shew to the spiritual man, that Jesus by his miracles and declaration which he made by the power of Faith, was *above*, or *walked upon all the waters* or powers of Reason, which is a *Sea*, but not the *crystal Sea*, or *Waters* of Faith; and sometimes this *Sea* or waters of Reason, was in a *Calm*, and sometimes in great *Trouble*; *i. e.* this, the seed of Reason, that transformed themselves to follow Jesus for the *outward Word and Miracle*, in their souls the *Waters* of Reason was in a *Calm*; but Christ must not be led aside by the *temptation* of Reason in that condition, not even in the *Elect*, as may be seen (Matt. xvi.) where Jesus said, "He must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priest, and be killed, and be raised again the *third* day; then Peter rebuked him, saying, be it far from thee, Lord;" here Peter, with love to his master, not willing any harm should come to him, spoke this, but it was from the spirit of Reason (for see verse 23.) "But he turned and said to Peter, get thee behind me *Satan*, for thou art an

“ offence to me ; for thou savourest not the things that “ be of God, but those that be of man ; ” therefore would not hearken to Reason, so as to be *tempted* by it : And those of the spirit of Reason that their *Waters was troubled*, sought to bring all manner of evil against him, and devour him, like the relentless *Waves of a troubled Sea* ; yet HE walked on those *spiritual Waters* by the power of Faith ; for he never was tempted by the *insinuating* spirit of Reason, nor drove out of his *Way* by the *wrathful* spirit of Reason ; and this is the *straight and narrow path* he had to go, to gather the kingdom of Heaven to himself.

Again, A declaration made by the *sacred inspiration of Jesus*, is a Message in the spiritual *Covenant of Grace*, i. e. Faith and Mercy ; and them that would follow the *Messenger*, if they keep the *Word of Faith and Patience* according to the declaration, they never will *sink into the Waters* of Reason, so as to be drowned ; for the *Voice of God in the Messenger*, may be likened to a ship that sails on the natural sea, which is directed by God’s providence to come *safe to Land*, through the midst of tempestuous waves, and whosoever abides in that ship, *will also*, come safe to Land ; so, in like manner, whosoever doth abide in the aforesaid *spiritual ship* will be brought through the *tempestuous sea* of Reason, to the holy spiritual *Birth and sanctification of CHRIST THE KING OF FAITH*, to enter his glorious kingdom : But if a man through emulation should think himself more wise than the *Messenger* in some things, and be tempted aside from the *Messenger*, or if a man through his distress of mind, on any occasion, should think he may go a *little* aside, now in either of those things they *tempt* the spirit of God, and are out of the *Ship*, in the *Waters of Wild Reason*, and let them take care they are not drowned ; they think to the contrary, true it is ! otherwise they would not do it ; but this I say, the more they think to the contrary, the deeper they are in the waters of Reason !

Moreover,

Moreover, In this Miracle *Peter desired to come to Jesus on the Waters*, and Jesus bid him come, which he did by the *Power of Jesus*, for no mans Faith can keep him up on those waters, in a *convinced state* only, as Peter then was in: Therefore, "when the sea was troubled he was afraid, and beginning to sink, he cried, *Lord, save me*, and Jesus caught him, and said, "O thou, of little Faith." This was to shew that all power and inspiration of Faith, belong to Christ the KING of GLORY; for this miracle was done by the power of Faith in Jesus, and Peter was let to know that he must *sink* without the help of Jesus, for although Peter was in no more than a *convinced state*, yet Jesus was here at hand to help him; but now, Jesus is ascended into *heaven*, and it must be the true *Prayer of Faith*, to reach him for his *divine assistance*; also when a man is inspired by Jesus, and *sent forth* in the holy covenant of *Grace and Mercy*, and those men that follow the *Messenger* in spirit will find his assistance is wanted at times, for the *Messenger* must walk on the waters, according to *his Message* he is sent on; but he stands before the *Throne*, so as to offer the prayer of Faith, for Christ's *divine assistance*, to help him through the *tempestuous Storms* of Reason.

Further, at this day this Miracle is to the *internal* spirit of Faith in the Elect, for Faith has the power of Reason to wade through, to get master of the soul, and sometimes Reason will be *Calm* in order to tempt the soul, and sometimes it will be in such a violent *Storm* in the soul, as if it would *drown*, or devour the man: *Anon* the inshining light of CHRIST appears in the soul to the assistance of Faith, then the soul is affrighted at his own darkness; but the divine light of JESUS is *understood* by the spirit of Faith in the soul, as if it was to say, "It is I, be not afraid!" therefore this is the *straight and narrow path* that Faith has to travel, which is between the *temptations* and *Storms* of Reason to gather *knowledge* of the *Messenger*, and *divine assistance* from Heaven,

Again, The *Parables* of JESUS tends to *spirit and life*, nay, are spirit and life, but no man can *know* the true meaning of Jesus in his parable, without his *divine assistance* from heaven; therefore (Matt. xiii.) "A sower went forth to sow, and when he sowed some seeds fell by the way-side, and the fowls came and devoured them up, and some fell upon stony places—and some fell among thorns." Those that *fell by the way-side* is this, the seed of Reason that hear the word, and the *power* of the word cannot find Faith in the soul to quicken into *understanding*, then it will be in the way of Reason, for Reason takes it by his *own* understanding, which is contrary to that of Faith; then Reason condemns the spirit and utterance of Faith, to be of the devil, and treats it with contempt and scorn, for he has no understanding in this condition but that of *wild Reason*; and the teachings and understanding of wild Reason is the common or *broad way that leadeth to destruction*; therefore the Reason of man, which is in man, is the devil, or *wicked one*, for to the seed and spirit of Reason, that only guides the soul, and is that which *devours the Word* of Faith, therefore called *Fowls*, which is of the *airy* imaginary *devouring* spirit, and goeth hastily into destruction.

And *that seed* which was received into *stony places*, is them that *bear the Word* and are pleased with it, so transform themselves into emulated joy, because they have the word, and may flourish for a *season*; but there will be difficulties attend, such as time, and expence, and the mock of Reason, &c. then Reason will take the mind aside, in order to save himself by his own cunning, because the *Word* cannot take *much root* in a heart of *Stone*; also *they* will not bear the internal wilds, and temptations, and persecutions of Reason, which must be done to bring forth the fruits of Faith, for the Son of Righteousness to save them, but *they* will turn from it, therefore *wither away*, and *lose* themselves by their *own wisdom*.

And

And *them that received seed among thorns*, is also some that *bear the Word* and are pleased with it, then *they* transform themselves to the *word or letter*, but the spirit of Reason takes the soul after the *deceitfulness of riches*, which incumber the soul, and lead it after cherubical grandeur, which is the vanity of this world, and the *word is choaked*; also in other some, the spirit of Reason will fill the soul with the fear of poverty, and keep the soul fully employed in the cares of this world, so that the word *dies away*, and the soul is *unfruitful*; for although poverty may speak against riches, yet if the soul is overcome by the spirit of Reason in the inthralment of either, it is the same thing in consequence:—
Now in the *three* foregoing states or conditions of soul, there is very little hope of the *Kingdom of Heaven*, for in the parable is contained *Life* to the *Elect*; but the *outward word* is but a *fragment*, and it puts Reason into agitation, then let them go which way they will with the word, or do as they will with it, there is always a priest to be found, internal or external, that will excuse them; but let them be ever so wise in themselves, the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven is hid from them; for when his disciples asked why he spake to them in parables, (ver. 11.) he answered and said unto them, “Because
 “it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the
 “kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not:” so Reason take the *outward word or fragment*, but the *spirit and life* from God take Faith through death to *Life*.

Ver. 8. “But other fell into good ground, and
 “brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixty
 “fold, and some thirty fold. (ver. 9.) who hath ears to
 “hear let him hear.” I would have the seed of Faith to observe, whenever Jesus saith, *whoever bath ears to hear, let him hear*, there is mentioned the *fruits of Faith* required unto salvation; or that all *quickening power* to bring forth Faith into act and redeem it, is in HIMSELF: Now the *good ground* is the Womb of Faith in the sons of Adam who are the Elect; therefore when the *Voice*

or

Echo of Faith is uttered, it centers into this womb of Faith, and there rests, then that quickens Faith into the knowledge of its own *Call*, and it will follow the Messenger who is the angel of the declaration ; also the *Voice* of Faith will work strong in the Womb, and will discover to the soul its own inherent darkness, and the man will be filled with fear and trembling, and say within himself, " It is impossible for such a dark soul " as he is, to be saved," then this reduces the soul into *Death*, which is a death to Reason, but in this death there is a *resignation* in the soul, so as to express itself in spirit, " the will of God be done," which is the *motion*, or the effect of Faith : Like unto the toss or throb of a *Child* that presses to be born from the womb of its mother ; then by the *death* of Reason, Faith quickens from its womb or seed, and comes forth into act, and this is the *Virgin Daughter of Israel*, or of Faith, being internally and spiritually *born* to the first spiritual covenant in the *soul of man*, which is the *birth of water* : Now Faith being *born* or brought forth into act, by the power of the *Word*, or *seed sown*, and *God's divine assistance from heaven*, it has given to it a *censor with incense*, *i. e.* Faith is the *Censor*, and its prayer the *Incense* that ascends up to heaven, to God for his divine assistance for its own increase, and patiently wait the Lord's leisure, and with meekness bear the insults of Reason : Now this is the *fruits or Works* of Faith that the soul is productive of, and is called by the spirit, *thirty fold*.

Again, Faith being *born of Water*, and finds itself in a fallen state, and under the power of justice and death, and surrounded with the wiles and temptations of Reason, who is seeking always to devour the soul, like unto the cormorant or a ravenous serpent : And this is what the spirit of Faith has to wade through, to get back to God from whence it came, which can be done no way but by *patience and prayer* for God's divine assistance in *regeneration* : Now the law and the angel is quick in the soul,

soul, and the spirit of Reason will tempt the soul to sin, then the man will be arraigned before the law, and threatened by the angel with eternal death ! which put Reason into great agitation, and worry itself as it were to death in the soul of man, for it cannot bear to face its own angel ; then Faith is the strongest in the soul, and will in prayer submit to the justice of God before the law and the angel ; but at the same time very eager to get forward to be rejected by GOD himself ; then the inshining light of JESUS in secret shines in the soul, and help, and let the soul go forward, and it has fine conceptions which the messenger will confirm ; thus the spirit of Faith grows strong, and offer its own offering : Anon the spirit of Reason is arrested by the *internal angel in Justice*, which is its own *Angel*, and that Reason cannot bear to face, therefore must die before him, then Faith offers itself to the will of God through *Justice*, and the secret voice comes from heaven to the angel, " Let the soul live," then the soul is taken forward unto greater communion with God in spirit, and see itself in the *true path* of God, which is the clear *road for heaven* ; and also prophecies that Christ will come in spirit and give him *spiritual Birth*, and regenerate him to himself, in his *holy covenant of grace to seal and raise him to his glorious kingdom* : Now in this state of soul, is the *time or glorious days of prophecy*, wherein a man prophecies of his own SALVATION ! which is the greatest prophecy for himself, and this degree of Faith the spirit calls *Sixty fold*. Also I would have the seed of Faith mind this—the *spirit or Daughter* of Faith is very desirous to go up in spirit to its own Angel, who is Christ the king of Faith in glory and offer at his royal feet ; but the spirit of Reason cannot face his *own Angel* and live, which is the *internal angel in justice*, or in plain terms, your *own conscience* who will condemn you ; therefore the *travail* is hard up to *Sixty fold* portion of Faith.

Yea, After this the soul is still in *travail*, and has its sorrow in the *clouds of darkness* ! and its joy with the divine

divine light from heaven ! Anon, he is called before God's divine justice which is the power of the father ; then the voice of JESUS comes through the justice of the Father, and asks, what fruit you have brought forth to be *born and regenerated* to his holy covenant of grace ? or what fruit have you brought forth to touch his *Mercy* in his holy covenant of grace ? Then (this voice of spiritual *Mercy* speaking through spiritual *Justice* into the *virgin Daughter* of Faith) HE begets to himself the spiritual son of Faith for his holy covenant of grace ; and this *Son* of Faith will press hard to be *born*, to ascend to Jesus in spirit, which when born it doth, and is sealed and sanctified for the kingdom of heaven ; this is the holy *Marriage* with the pure virgin daughter of Faith, and the spiritual birth ; and the BOOK OF LIFE being opened to the soul ! and the man that comes back with this message, is a *Messenger* in the holy covenant of grace ; and he comes under *Mercy* ! and his Faith is an *Hundred fold*. Now I would have the Elect to understand, that the *hundred fold* portion of Faith will be theirs also ; for they will be called forward to the spiritual birth and regeneration ; " But many " that are first will be last, and the last will be first," because this is mostly done at the hour of death, and it is according to the will of God, and the life of man ; and when God is graciously pleased to send a *Messenger* with this *hundred fold* portion of Faith, happy is that soul that is found without murmur against that *Messenger* !

C H A P. VII.

AGAIN, (Matt. xiii. 24.) Jesus puts forth another parable, saying, " The kingdom of heaven is likened " unto a man which sowed good seed in his field, but " while men slept his enemy came and sowed tares " among the wheat, and went his way : " Now this was

was first done when Adam and Eve hearkened to the voice of the serpent angel, which was, and is, the devil, because many of his posterity are yet living; therefore when Adam and Eve was left to their created strength, the *Law of Faith* slept in them, which they should have *watched*, then innocence was overcome by subtilty; and this serpent angel sowed his spiritual body into the womb of Eve, and her soul was incumbered with his evil spirit, which she could not get intirely clear from until her death, when she was translated to, under the *mercy of the Son*, and now layeth in the bed of mercy!

Moreover, it was by this *evil spirit* she tempted and overcome Adam, then his soul was also incumbered with this *evil spirit*, and he could not get clear from it, until his death, when he was translated to under the *mercy of the Son*! Thus Eve bare Cain by or from the serpent angel's transmuting himself into her womb, and this was the *enemy* (or devil) *that sowed the tares and went his way*; i. e. after he sowed himself into the womb of Eve, *he went his way*, so as to be brought forth a man-child in this world, which is *the field* for generation under the attributes of justice and mercy.

Further, After Cain was born, there was left as afore-said, the *evil spirit* of Reason, an inhabitant in the souls of Adam and Eve, which was not only a grand enemy to the spirit of Faith in them, but also to their sons and daughters to this day; thus the *evil spirit* was sown in the Elect; which is *their* grand internal enemy to the spirit of Faith, for it produces *briers, thorns, tares, &c.*

Also when Cain grew to manhood he slew his brother Abel, and so became a *Murderer*; and when he was arraigned before the internal angel in justice, whom he called lord, there he told a lie to excuse himself, then he was found both a *liar and murderer*; but God's justice was stayed so far, that he should be loosed by the angel for a time and go into the *Land of Nod*, i. e. to forget the power of the *Angel* so far, that hopes of for-

givenness may rise from the spirit of Reason; because from him was to come a large generation, which are called *serpents and vipers*, because they are of his spirit; then he preached to his children his great experience he had before the angel, because he was loosed for a time; and then according to the imagination of Reason, he formed his own *forgiveness* and friendship with God: Now this is the *Water* of Reason, because it waters the souls and spirits of the seed of Reason, relative to the *Hope* of their eternal happiness; and is called *the great river Euphrates in the Land of Nod*, which now runs in the souls of men.

Moreover, concerning this Worship imagined and formed by the spirit of Reason (and by it is dedicated for God to own) it is become so powerful, that when the *Voice and spirit* of God appears on this earth, to declare his divine will and pleasure to his Elect, it is so contrary to the will and worship of Reason, that it cannot bear the *spirit of God*, or the *spirit of Faith*, which is of the divine nature, should live, therefore will seek all they can to *murder* it; for to the spirit of Reason the voice of God appears as great blasphemy, and as such they *condemn* it, which is spiritual *Murder*; if not, murder the man that brings it, as a blasphemer: This the seed of Reason will do, that cannot transform themselves into the *outward word* or bare letter, and so follow the man (but in their *own way*) to exalt themselves higher up in emulation by the language.

Again, Those of the spirit of Reason that endeavoured to *kill* Faith; After the Messenger is dead, will in time transform themselves into *his Letter*, for that is but *killing the man, and taking possession*, and claim all the *Inheritance of the promises* made to the Elect, and the *prophecies of the coming of CHRIST*, and say that belongs to them; but when Christ *comes* either in person or spirit then they know him not, but will contend with him, as may be seen in John's gospel, (chap. viii.) where the Jews contended with Jesus, for what they read

read in the *Letter of Moses*, and claim it as their own; Now according to the cherubical inspiration of Moses, (which is the law) is their own, and the internal Angel in justice, who is in the soul of man, has power from Heaven to condemn them, according to the law; but the *mystical union and spiritual communion* in Faith between God and his Elect, wherein the *promise of salvation* was made to them, and the *prophecy of the coming of CHRIST*, that belongs to the Elect only; therefore when Christ came in person to redeem, the Elect was made known to him, but the seed of Reason knew him not, so contended with him, saying, "they had *Abraham* to their father;" JESUS answered and said unto them, "If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of *Abraham*;" i. e. to believe in him, and bring forth the fruits of Faith, as *Abraham* did: And he also said, "But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the *Truth*;" then the *Jews* said to Jesus, "We are not born of fornication, we have one Father, even God;" and (ver. 44.) Jesus said, "Ye are of your father the devil, and the lust of your father ye will do; he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the *Truth*, because there is no *truth* in him, when he speaketh a lie he speaketh of his own, for he is a liar, and the father of it:" Now their father was Cain, who was the first born son of the devil into this world; and is called the *wicked one* because he is of the *wicked one*, for he killed Abel, who was born the seed of Faith, and HIS offering was accepted; therefore Cain murdered Abel, and afterward told a lie to excuse himself, and as so was a murderer and liar from the beginning, and his children do the deeds of their father, as Christ told the *Jews*; because they are the *tares that was sown by the enemy*, and are enemies to God and his Elect, who are the *wheat of good seed*.

Again (Matt. xiii. 26.) "But when the blade was sprung up and brought forth fruit, then appeared the *tares* also," i. e. when the Spirit of Faith is active in

the Elect, it well knows there is manifest a contrary nature to that of Faith, for this contrary nature will mock, belie, and persecute Faith, because it cannot agree or unite with it; so has killed many of the servants of God, for their Faith and prophecy. Now when God was, or is, graciously pleased to commune with the spirit of Faith, above the power of the internal angel in justice, which is the mystical union and spiritual communion between God and his Elect; then the spirit of *enquiring Faith* by prayer is this, *O Lord God, thou did'st create man in thy own image, and after thy own likeness*—which is this, the soul or life of man was created of the divine nature of God, whereby man is called the *Son of God*, by the holy spirit, thus God sowed Faith in man, which is the *wheat or good seed* brought forth by generation in this world, which is the *field*: Then the spirit saith, *from whence came those tares* that are such great enemies to the fruits of Faith and divine truth? and the answer is, *an enemy hath done this*: then the spirit or servants in justice say, *wilt thou that we go and gather them up?* but God said, “No, least ye root up the Wheat also,” *i. e.* because they are so closely connected by generation, therefore must *grow together*, and them that are the seed of Faith will by God's divine assistance, bring forth the fruits of Faith for SALVATION, and are taken into the holy and spiritual covenant of Grace, or mercy of the SON; and the other are left behind under the power of the internal angel in justice, whereby men will be their own witness to their own condemnation.

Further of this *Parable*—When the God of justice transmuted himself into his created nature of Adam, which was human nature animated with divine Faith, and become flesh, to become the God of mercy; thus God become man and called himself the *Son of Man*, and his voice was of one utterance, which was Faith, to call his Elect to his divine mercy, and directed his voice to the womb or *seed* of Faith in the souls of his Elect,
to

to quicken it into act, and bring it up and regenerate it to his holy covenant of grace and mercy : therefore God *sowed the good seed* of Faith into Adam and Eve when he created them, and was in the condition of God the Father : And when he became a true son to the power of the father he again *sowed the good seed* of Faith into Faith, which was for his redemption and mercy, and that Faith should bring forth fruits in *Regeneration*, acceptable to him for his grace and mercy.

Again, When JESUS uttered his declaration, there was some of the *seed* of Reason transformed themselves so as to *follow him* for his outward word and *Miracle* ; but as the fruits of Faith could not be brought out of them, they must judge of him according to the spirit of Reason : therefore will *sow* their Reason which is the *Tares*, in and among the true declaration, which is the *Wheat*, even in the name of Jesus : as (in Mark xiii.) where Jesus himself said " For many shall come in my " name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceive many ; " and this spirit of Reason will cause contentions, and bring in *temptations* to allure the soul from divine *Truth*, to follow the spirit of Reason, and also bring in vain excuses, to excuse themselves in evil, and seeking after this world, which is *making their belly their god* ; and those *tares that sow* themselves into any declaration that come from *Heaven*, under the attribute of divine mercy, the *Elect are to WATCH*.

Moreover, There is this evil spirit of Reason in the Elect, that was sown by the *enemy*, as I said before ; this also the *Elect must WATCH*, for this is the great *Enemy* of all, because this will keep your own spirit of Faith back from *following CHRIST*, if possible : Now this is a *Plant that God the heavenly Father* (to the Elect) *did not plant* in the souls of his Elect ; therefore Jesus said to *his* disciples (Matt. xv.) " Every plant " which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be " rooted up," *i. e.* the voice of Jesus centers to the womb or seed of Faith in the souls of his Elect, and gives

gives birth to a virgin daughter, which I call the spiritual daughter of Faith or of Israel, and she has to wade through the wilds and temptations of Reason, both external and internal, which she will do by her prayer and God's divine assistance from heaven; then Faith becomes the strongest inhabitant of the soul; and this virgin becomes a Bride meet for marriage with JESUS! then HE unites his holy spirit with this virgin daughter, and begets to himself a Son called inspiration, which is spiritually born for the Kingdom of Heaven! and sealed for the Kingdom of Glory, with his royal spiritual SEAL! and dies in the bed of mercy! So Faith becomes the essential life of man for the resurrection, and Reason is withered away, or rooted up; and Faith will get clear of it. Also the spirit of Reason in the Elect, signifies the Fig-tree that Christ found no fruit thereon, then he said, "Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever," and presently it withered away; therefore when the VOICE of GOD even in the Messenger calls to Faith, Reason is also touched, and will, by degrees, wither away as a useless plant (to bear fruit for the kingdom of heaven) like unto the fig-tree.

Again, I would have the seed of Faith to know the power of Reason is a three-fold enemy to them; i. e. there is of the seed of Reason that will thunder out blasphemy and persecution, seeking all they can by force to drive you from CHRIST: Also there is of the seed of Reason that will transform themselves into your own declaration, and declare themselves your brother in Christ, and at the same time tempt you from him; and there is your own spirit of Reason in yourselves, which will tempt the soul, and is very eager to hear temptation without, to allure the soul from Jesus, therefore WATCH and sleep not, if possible, lest Reason, the enemy, sow tares among you, and take you into captivity; for this is the Way, the world is, in generation and darkness, and Faith has hard travail out of it; therefore when the disciples of Jesus said unto him, "Declare unto us the
"parable

“parable of the *tares* of the field,” and he said unto them, (as Matt. xiii.) “He that soweth the good *seed* “is the son of man; the field is the world, the good “*seed* are the children of the kingdom, but the *tares* “are the children of the wicked one, the enemy that “soweth them is the devil, the harvest is the end of the “world, and the reapers are the angels.” I would have the Elect to know, that *Christ is the Angel* of the covenant of *Grace*, and them that are *born* in spirit, are angels *in* the covenant of grace, and the Elect are the angels *for* the covenant of grace; therefore in the days of a Messenger, the spirit being *active* on this earth, they gather the Elect to the *seal* of the living God; and when there is no Messenger on earth, CHRIST gathers his *Elect* at the hour of death, by his holy spirit; And the *children of the wicked one* are manifest, and under the seal of the internal angel in *justice*; and as every man hath his own angel, they are gathered out of the kingdom under *justice*; thus the two *Seeds* or generations are gathered to *Mercy* and *Justice*, then fall in death, and there lay till the Resurrection.

C H A P. VIII.

AGAIN, *Jesus* said (Luke xiii.) “Unto what is the “kingdom of heaven like, and whereunto shall I resemble it; it is like a grain of mustard seed, which a “man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew and “waxed a great tree, and the fowls of the air lodged in “the branches of it.” Now I would have the *seed of Faith to understand*, that Christ who is the eternal God, has the essential spirit of Faith, which is by himself likened to a *grain of mustard seed*, and this spirit of Faith is all-powerful, to work, or bring things to pass, according to his divine will and pleasure; and not only

so,

so, but also, if his divine wisdom should suffer his works to be invaded, then by his *boly spirit, or grain of Faith*, he has power to recover it again, with great advantage to himself and his Elect: Thus the divine Majesty was graciously pleased to create Adam and Eve with a life of Faith, which was and is of his divine nature: So the Grain of Faith was *sown* into this earth, and became a *Garden* in the souls of his Elect, or *good ground*, to bring forth the *fruits* of Faith, unto translation or *re-generation for the kingdom of Heaven*.

Then the serpent angel, or devil, came and *sowed* himself both in person and spirit into Eve; then she tempted and overcame *Adam*, as I said, (Chap. vii.) so Reason came and *lodged* itself in the tabernacles of Faith, who was the *Branches* of God; and by its lying imagination, on vain *airy* things, will *tempt* and captivate the soul, because it thinks it is become one with, or *above* the spirit of Faith, even in the Elect, when rose from the dead: And the children of Cain, who are *the fowls of the air*, they, according to their imagination, think and say they are one with the seed of Faith, or children of God, who are of and for the *kingdom of heaven*: Thus the kingdom of heaven was invaded in the beginning, *and the fowls of the air came and lodged*, according to God's creation of Faith, and his promises made to that *Seed*; so the Elect are much troubled with those *fowls of the air*, both external and internal.

Again, when the very eternal God (who was become the God of justice through the acts of man and angel) transmuted himself into flesh, to become the God of Mercy; he took his own created nature of Adam on himself, which was human nature animated with divine Faith; and left Reason to itself, to die and *wither away* in the Elect; for he took only the nature of Faith, which was under the power of death, to keep its law, and make it alive by his death and resurrection:—Thus the *uncreated grain of Faith sowed himself* into his *own created grain of Faith*, and was born a child, and *grew* to manhood, and redeemed the Elect world.

Further

Further as I have said, When JESUS uttered his holy gospel of peace and mercy, he had the womb, or *seed of Faith* in the souls of his Elect to work upon, which is the *garden or good ground that HE sowed* in creation: then there was the *Voice of GOD*, which is the utterance of pure divine Faith; *sowed* in Faith, which was in a fallen state, yet capable of hearing the voice of God; which was *sowed as a grain of mustard seed*, to raise Faith from death to life, for the redemption and salvation of his Elect, and to recover his lost kingdom again in mercy, to himself: Thus JESUS *sowed* his holy covenant of grace and mercy in the garden of Faith, which is in the souls of his Elect, even out of the world, and gathered them together out of the world; because the works and fruits of Faith is contrary to the works of Reason, for that is of the world; and HE *offered* up his prayer for his Elect, before the throne of the Father; therefore Jesus said, (in John's gospel xvii.) "I pray for them, I pray not for the world, but for *them* which thou has given me, for *they* are thine." Because Jesus created them his *own children* when he was in the glory of the Father.

Yea, by the power of this holy *grain* of Faith, JESUS went through the power of Reason, sin, death, and hell, and ascended into the glory of mercy, and has power over justice: Thus the spirit of Faith which is *likened to a grain of mustard seed that was sown* into its own garden, *which is but a small seed, yet it grew up* through the power of Reason, sin, death, hell, and justice, *and his top reaches the high heaven* of mercy.— Also Jesus when he was ascended into his glory of mercy, he gave his holy spirit to his Apostles, who then become *branches of this tree*, and by their preaching, *this tree branched forth* into many glorious promises made to the Elect, and CHRIST *came, and doth come*, in spirit to the Elect, according to the promises made; and gathers them into his heaven of grace.

Again, The power and acts of Jesus in gathering his glorious kingdom of Faith together, is *likened unto a grain of mustard seed*, in this—When JESUS went forth to utter his holy gospel, he declared himself the SON of GOD; and came to redeem his lost kingdom, *Israel*, and salvation could not be had but through HIM; this being done by a MAN who was in *weakness and shame*, in the eye of Reason, and his *language* contrary to their imagination; this *seed being sown* in and among the world, it appeared very *small* in the eye of Reason, nay impossible to be, therefore treated him with contempt and scorn; but this *small seed* fell into his own garden of Faith, and they came and followed him both in person and spirit, and brought forth the fruits of Faith, and by him was healed for the *kingdom of heaven*: Also Jesus went forth declaring his holy gospel and working miracles, so his fame spread abroad, that multitudes of people came to him and was healed, that some of the *seed* of Reason transformed themselves to him, for his outward word and Miracle; neither could the persecuting spirit of Reason stop him in his declaration until he had finished his testimony, and after he was ascended he sent his *Apostles* by his holy spirit, which are the *branches*, so that Witnesses to, (and the declaration of) his holy Gospel *spread abroad, and waxed great*.

Moreover as I have said, no man can make any declaration or promise, without words, on this earth, therefore when the word is spoken by the Messenger of GOD, the *spirit* of that word centers to Faith in the Elect, but the *bare word* is but a fragment, what the spirit has left *behind*: Also the spirit comes from JESUS in glory, according to promise to his Elect, and heals them, but the bare word or *Letter* is a fragment, what the spirit has left behind to others: Also man must be *born in spirit* to the mystical union and spiritual communion with Christ, to *know* the mystery of the kingdom of heaven, by the *word spoke*, for the bare word or

Letter

Letter is but a fragment, what the spirit hath left behind as aforesaid. Now when the declaration of the *holy Gospel* spread abroad, there came many of the seed of Reason, and transformed themselves into the outward word or letter, and laid their claim to Jesus, but *sowed sedition*, and brought in heresies, contention, &c. thus the kingdom of heaven was invaded, and *the fowls of the air, came and lodged in the declaration*, almost from the beginning of the gospel.

Again, When the persecuting spirit of Reason had put Christ and his servants to death, then they or their children, transformed themselves into the letter of the gospel, and claimed all the promises that was made to the Elect; for when there is no Messenger on earth the seed of Reason can put what constructions (on the letter) they please: Now I would have the Elect *understand* this, when any man (or men) is inspired by God himself from heaven, that man can, by the power of Faith, *enquire of God*, because the spirit of God is *active* in the soul of such a man, but when this man dies the spirit is withheld, and the letter is but a fragment without the spirit; now it remains in the will of the DIVINE MAJESTY, when he will be graciously pleased to send again, *i. e.* to inspire a man, with his holy spirit in his holy covenant of grace, *and send him back into this world to tell his Tale*, thus God can send which of his Elect he please, without consulting any created, or generated being in heaven or earth: Then CHRIST *is come again in spirit*, and the power of the *Letter* is known by his holy inspiration from heaven.

Moreover from the death of one *Messenger* to the inspiration of another, there is *silence in the nether heaven* of Faith in the souls of his Elect, in respect to public act and declaration, for they know not what to do, they being so *captivated* by both internal and external Reason, until the hour of death, when CHRIST is graciously pleased to raise Faith from death to life, and *Call* by his holy spirit, and take it into his holy spiritual covenant

of grace, and then it dies in the bed of mercy: this was known to God and themselves *only*, for they never came back to tell their brethren; so at this time of *silence* in heaven, *the fowls of the air came and lodged in the declaration of the gospel, which are the out branches*; thus, *the kingdom of heaven has suffered violence, and the violent take it by force*, not only in person but in spirit, by their imagination, from the days of JESUS until this day, and is also done in, or by the declaration of the *Third Record*.

Further, as no other *Name* was ever given from heaven, that salvation was, or is, to be had, but that of JESUS ONLY, therefore as through the *Merits of Jesus*, the Elect world are saved, his acts and declaration being left behind on *literal Record*, that multitudes, nations, &c. has transformed themselves into this *Letter* and claim all the promises made to the Elect; Also the declaration of, and concerning JESUS, is very scopious as man may think, because of different sayings written therein; yet I would have men *understand* that these sayings center in *two Heads, i. e.* in *promises* to the Elect, and *Threats* to the children of the wicked One, generation of Vipers, wicked generation, &c.

Again, Many men who has *lodged* themselves in the declaration, has gone forth and preached in the name of Jesus, and according as they find different sayings they differ in judgment for want of *heavenly knowledge*, thus on the off-set their imagination is divided concerning *Christ*, for some will have him all *influence*, and no person,—others will have him all *person*, and no influence, but the outward word or bare letter,—others will have him the *second* person in the trinity,—others will have their *own* imagination on the letter, to be the influence or spirit of Christ: Also in the *salvation* of Christ they equally differ; some will have the light of Christ within to guide them, but will own no glorified personal Christ without them (therefore whereunto is this light to guide *them*): others say their *belief* in the letter is sufficient for

for them, without prayer or the influence of Christ from heaven, and by that say they have the assurance of eternal life,—others will have *free-will*,—and others *free-grace* ; but if men will ask for grace they may have it, which is the same thing as a man to be saved by his *own free-will* : Also there is others who say, Christ died to save the whole world, and all *may or will* be saved ! Thus men by their evil imagination will divide Christ according to their *own will* ; and invoke him by his holy Name to own their goings out of the spirit of Reason on the *Letter*, which is to invoke him to be a servant to the imagination of man's heart, which is evil, and this is making things according to the *Will of man*.

Moreover the *seed* or spirit of Reason never did, or possibly could make any declaration, prophecy, or promise of the coming of Christ, or the salvation of the Elect ; this was done by the *seed* of Faith ; they being inspired from heaven so to do : then the seed of Reason would transform themselves into that declaration, and claim the promises and preach it up ; but in this they can bring forth no more fruit by the declaration, than they did in bringing of the declaration, *i. e.* they brought forth no fruit in bringing of a declaration, nor no fruit in the declaration brought by another, because the seed and spirit of Reason is *barren* of fruit for the *kingdom of heaven* ; for as it is not given them to *understand the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven* by Faith, which no one can without, then they must preach it by the spirit of Reason ; therefore as CHRIST by his holy spirit likens the kingdom of heaven unto *Light and Life*, they, by the letter, liken the kingdom of heaven according to their *imagination* which is death and darkness ; *i. e.* men read the *Letter*, and by their spirit of Reason make to themselves their own redemption, and invoke his holy name to *cloak* their evil spirits and acts, and at the same time call him a liar, not only before the spirit, but in the *Letter* also.

Now

Now I would have men *understand* that whoever goeth forth to preach the name of CHRIST by any spirit contrary to the holy spirit of Christ, and render him, or his glorious acts contrary to what he is, or his holy intent by his almighty acts, that man or men are *false Christs*, and preach falsely in his name, and they cry, *Lo, here is Christ, and, Lo, there is Christ*, as HE prophesied would come; and thus heaven was invaded by the seed and spirit of Reason, who are *the fowls of the air, that came and lodged in the declaration*.

Further, the kingdom of heaven is given to the seed of Faith, who can bring forth the fruits thereof, and become the children of God; now the *Gospel* centers to that head, but in it there is also *Threats* to the seed of Reason, that transform themselves into the letter of Jesus, and claim and *take the kingdom of heaven by force*, that it *will* become one with the children of God, and *preach and pray* in his name; therefore this is to be minded, when the spirit speaks to Faith, and when it speaks to Reason, as (Matt. vii.) Jesus said, "for every one that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened." Here Jesus speak to the seed of Faith, to whom the kingdom of heaven will be given: again, Jesus said, (ver. 22.) "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name have cast out devils, and in thy name done many wonderful works? and then will I profess unto them, I never knew you, *depart* from me ye that work iniquity." Here Jesus speak to the seed of Reason, and particularly to them that are *Preachers*.

Again, When any man is *inspired* by the holy spirit of Jesus, and sent back to tell his *Tale*, then CHRIST is come in spirit, that the soul may be warned and prepared to meet him, to receive his seal, which is the *Seal of the Living God*: After this the man is fit to meet him, in his personal glory, in the resurrection to eternal life: therefore the voice of Jesus Christ, through the Messenger,

senger, centers to Faith in the souls of his Elect, and calls it into act, then there is Faith united with Faith, in communion with each other, in the true worship of God, and the mystery of its own prayer; now this is the *netter heaven* of Faith, or the *heaven* in Faith, on this earth, and the seed of Faith being *called*, will come into *this heaven*, and are the *fowls that fly in the midst of (this) heaven*, because they are united by Faith, and *gather* their way (by the prayer of Faith and divine assistance from heaven) to *Mercy*, as Christ himself did, to his most high glorious *THRONE of Mercy*.

Moreover, (Rev. xix.) "And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, come gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God." This *Angel in the sun* is Christ, who was the God of *Justice*, and is now become the God of *Mercy*, by his becoming a *Son or Servant* to his own power:—And by his holy spirit, which is Faith and Mercy, he now *calls* his Elect to his mercy, and they must *sup with God*! Now this *Supper of the GREAT GOD*! "is to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great;" this is the seed and spirit of Reason that *persecuted and tempted CHRIST, and do persecute and tempt his Elect*; for when Jesus was here they persecuted and tempted him, and blasphemed against his holy spirit and power, this He *bore in sorrow* of soul, which is *eating the flesh of kings, and of captains, and of mighty men*: for Reason, both *great and small*, with all their power combined to persecute him, by their own *dark spirit* (which came from *Chaos*) and poured out their wrath upon him, which he was compelled to take and *bear in sorrow*! Now this is *in spirit to eat the flesh of (Reason) both great and small, and of all sorts, i. e. to bear whatever Reason should say of him, and do to him; and who-*
ever

ever comes into *this heaven* of Faith, must in this manner *sup with the Great GOD of Mercy!* as HE did, when HE was here.

C H A P. IX.

FURTHER, (Rev. xix. 19.) "John saw the beast, and the kings of the earth and their armies, gather together, to make war against *Him* that sat on the horse and against *his* army;" he who *sat on the horse* was CHRIST, for HE went forth and *conquered* by the power of Faith, which is righteousness, and this is the *white horse Christ sat upon*: Also the Elect will *conquer* by the power of Faith and divine assistance of Christ from heaven; and their souls will be made *white* by the power of God in regeneration, then the soul will sit on the *horse* of Faith also. Now the *fowls that fly in the midst of this heaven* of Faith, go forth to conquer by the power of Faith, and *follow Christ* who is their *King*; and those *who gather together against him and his army*, are the seed and spirit of Reason, *They* ride the black horse, and persecute Faith, which is giving them their *flesh to eat*, because it is all their strength and power (in a body of *flesh and blood*) in persecution: This is the warfare between Reason and Faith, when CHRIST was on this earth in person; and when HE *is in spirit*, then the spirit of Reason go out against the *holy spirit*, with blasphemy, murder, &c. and *fill* themselves on the destruction of the *Saints*, and are made *drunk* with their own *wrath*, and curses against the seed of Faith; but by *Mercy, Meekness, Long-suffering, and Prayer*, Faith will overcome; then the internal angel in *justice* has sealed them unto wrath, and will *double unto them double*, of their own *flesh* or wrath to feed upon for ever, what they in their life, gave the saints to eat.

Again,

Again, When the voice of God is uttered on this earth, the seed of Faith will come; why? because Faith knows its own *Call*, to follow God in spirit, *and the fowls of the air, which lodge in the declaration or bare Letter*, will belie and persecute the seed of Faith, who are the *fowls that fly in the heaven of Faith, i. e.* to follow God and be under his teachings, instead of wandering in the bare Letter. Also the voice of God is a *sharp sword* to the spirit of Reason, and *then* in this war, they will *fill the fowls that fly in the heaven of Faith with their flesh, i. e.* with persecution; but Faith by its meekness and long-suffering will overcome: And them that persecute and prophecy against them, are taken by the internal angel in *justice*, in their own *wrath*, which will burn for ever and ever.

Moreover, When JESUS was here in a body of flesh, and declared his holy gospel, there was some of the seed of Reason transformed themselves to his outward declaration, as I have said, and was on his part, as not to persecute and disturb him therein; but as they could not *understand* him by his heavenly *Mystery of Faith*, they must understand by the spirit of Reason, so would *scatter from him* in spirit.—Note, *i. e.* *Except the Spirit in the word centers into the womb of Faith, and there rest, and quickens the spirit into act, and by this spirit of Faith gather their Way to his glorious mercy, as HE himself gathered HIS Way, to HIS glorious throne of mercy, they scatter abroad by the spirit of Reason!* Therefore Jesus said (Matt. xii.) “He that is not with me, is against me, and he that *gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.*” Here Jesus speak intirely against Reason, for them *that did nor follow HIM, was against him*, and those of Reason *who did follow, scattered abroad*, because they *gathered not* by his holy spirit, for them *who follow CHRIST, will sup with CHRIST the GREAT GOD!* so must *taste and eat* of persecution, in this bewildered and dark kingdom of Reason.

K

Again,

Again, JESUS when he eat the passover or supper with his disciples : they *eat bread and drank wine*, but it was in *Sorrow*, because it was unto his *death* ; for after this *He went out to pray in great sorrow and agony ! so that sweat dropt from him, as it were drops of blood !* then the powers of Reason *took and crucified him* ; in this *HE eat the flesh of kings, captains, &c.* in persecution unto his death : Also JESUS *break bread* and gave them, and said, “ take, eat, this is my body,” and gave them *wine*, and said, “ drink ye all of it, this is “ my blood of the new testament, which is shed for “ many, for the remission of sins.” Also John’s gospel (vi. 53.) Jesus said, “ except ye eat the flesh of the son “ of man, and drink his blood, ye have no *Life* in “ you ;” now if eating *bread* and drinking *wine*, under any ordination, or consecration appointed by men, will gain *Heaven*, I say it is easy gained ; also to *believe* that Christ crucified without the gates of Jerusalem, was the *eternal God*, and shed his blood for the sins of his Elect, if bare *belief* of this, or rather repeating the declaration of *another man*, will gain *heaven*, it is easy done ; for this, *the fowls of the air that come and lodge* in the declaration, can, and will do ; yet *gather their way* and understanding of Christ, by their *dark spirit* of Reason, and persecute the spirit of Christ when it appears.

Further, of *eating the flesh, and drinking the blood of Jesus*, who was the GOD of *Justice*, and transmuted himself into his own created nature of Adam, to become the GOD of *Mercy* ! thus God became perfect man, and a true *Son* to the power of the *Father* ; therefore HE took the *fallen* nature of Faith, or *human* nature, on *HILL*, and found himself in Reason’s kingdom, in the midst of persecution and temptation, *so* he eat the flesh of Reason in this sorrowful vale of death !—this HE bore by the spirit of Faith and *Mercy*, for he was *merciful* to all, so far as it would extend according to his eternal decree : Also in this *vale of death*, he refused this world, and with meekness left it behind, under the
Justice

Justice of the Angel; also in this sorrowful vale, he kept the *Law of Faith*, and in the mystical union of Faith with them who sat in the glory of the *Father*, to whom he offered his prayer for divine assistance, and by this power of Faith he *gathered his Way* to his glorious kingdom of Mercy; therefore in CHRIST was found the *Fruits of Faith*, which is PATIENCE, MEEKNESS, OBEDIENCE, LONG-SUFFERING, LOVE, MERCY, CHARITY, &c. These *He bore*, and this *He produced* in a body of flesh, in this sorrowful vale of death. Further, in obedience to the *power* of the Father, HE *gave* himself up to death, and lost himself in his own blood in death, *under the Justice of the Father*, to quicken in spirit to the glory and *Mercy of the Son*: Now whoever doth this according to the portion of the creature, I do confess he *follows Christ*, and eats his *flesh* and drinks his *blood*; because he finds himself in that condition, as Christ was in when he was here, and must *suffer in flesh* as Christ did.

Again, When the disciples of JESUS *eat bread and drank wine* with him in his life time, it was no more than an *outward Sign* or confession, for there must be the *internal* and powerful works of Faith come after, otherwise he is in danger of this saying (John xiii.) "He that eateth *bread* with me, hath lifted up his heel against me." Therefore when the apostles received the Holy Ghost to preach Christ crucified, they found they was obliged to *eat the flesh* of Reason, in persecution, and also found themselves in fallen Faith, and human nature, and well knew they were but *pilgrims* in Reason's kingdom! therefore in this *vale of Sorrow*, or death, by the fruits and prayer of Faith for the assistance of Christ from heaven; and in obedience to the mystical union of Faith between Christ, which was the *spiritual wine* he promised when he entered his kingdom, they gave up their lives, and was lost in death in their own blood; but then they received the *Seal* of Christ their king, and died in the bed of *Mercy*, to be quick-

ened into an intire *pure life* of Faith: And in this they *eat the flesh and drank the blood of JESUS*, by working the works of Faith, and drinking the *Cup* of sorrow in a *body of flesh* as he did.

Further, When Jesus eat the *passover* with his disciples, it was in obedience to the commands of Moses who ordained it to be kept as a *memorial*; but to the spiritual *Wise man* was to shew forth Jesus in the travail of this life had *passed over the Angel*: Also when Moses instituted the *passover*, it was by taking "a male lamb
"without blemish, out from the sheep or goats, and
"to strike the door posts with the blood, and in the
"night eat the flesh roast with fire, his head, legs, and
"with the Purtenance thereof," and this was the *token*, to the *destroying Angel*, to *pass over Israel*, and save them alive, when he struck dead the *first born* of all Egypt: Now this was because Israel obeyed Moses, and they was to worship God according to the cherubical inspiration: Also this *Lamb* was to shew the power of God concerning his creation, and the cherubical *Law*, and of that justice, and that he was master of all the creation, therefore if Reason worship God in that *Law* and priesthood given forth by Moses, the *destroying angel* would *pass over* them.

Again, this *Lamb* was to shew Reason if he obeyed the commands of God he would bring them out of *bondage*, and that they should stand under his protection, and enjoy the blessing of God's creation, but they must be obedient to his will, and worship him in all trouble, sorrow, distress, &c. in the travail of this life, without murmur; which is *eating the flesh of the Lamb, with the purtenance, and with bitter herbs*; and then God will bring them out of *bondage* to his blessing, then the Angel will *pass over*, or justice will be *stayed* on them.

Also, *Egypt* is wild arrogant Reason, that seek to do their *own will* and have their *own way*, seeking *vain glory*, *fading greatness*, and to rule over the *souls* of men,

men, and will not be obedient to the commands of God, but pursue, according to their *own will*; and in this they act against God, let them pretend or say what they will to the contrary: further, in *Egypt* their grand hope, or eager desire, and great care is their *first born*, that the destroying *Angel*, who is now the internal angel in justice will cut off, for in the end they will not find it to their liking, but to their sorrow of soul; also if man possess riches, &c. let him look where they are given him, because he worships God according to the cherubical inspiration, and that given priesthood; if not, it is given as a trial, and lays liable to be cut off through the internal angel in justice; but if a man worship God, then what is *given* is his own, and the angel will *pass over* him, and all will end well so far as that relates.

Moreover as aforesaid, When the *passover* was eaten by Jesus and his disciples, it was to shew Jesus had *passed over* the justice of the *Angel*, which is justice to Reason, for he took not the nature of Reason on him, nor had any thing to do with that nature, law, or covenant, but to leave it behind under the power of the *internal Angel* in justice, which is now the *destroying Angel* to Reason, and in this he *passed over* that angel: but JESUS had took the created nature of Adam on him, and *passed under* the justice of the *Father*; and then was going to *pass* into death *under* the justice of the *Father*, and *through* death, and the justice of the *Father*, to his royal kingdom of divine *Mercy*: Also when JESUS *broke and blessed bread*, and gave them, saying, "eat, this is my body," and gave them the cup, saying, "drink, this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many, for the remission of sins;" which was to shew forth, the very God of Heaven became man to redeem his Elect, and eat and drink as man, and with man, and lost himself in death in his own blood, and rose again for the redemption; for until that was done the *new Testament* could not
take

take place; and that he would unite Elect men to himself, and make them flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone, and spirit of his spirit, by the power of his *regeneration*, and holy MARRIAGE! —He that hath *wisdom*, let him understand this!

Again, When this *passover* was eat, the Angel had *passed over* eleven disciples (because Judas fell) for then they would be taken into the compact and *priesthood* of Faith, and the *prophecy* of JESUS, and to *sup with him in spirit*; therefore blessed is he whom the Angel has *passed over*, for him to be taken into the royal *priesthood of Christ*, and then he will *pass by* the Angel (in Justice of and to Reason) because of regeneration; for he cannot *pass over* it as Christ did, but he must *pass under* the justice, and through the justice, of the Father, which is justice to Faith, as Christ himself did.

Moreover, (Matt. xxvi. 29.) JESUS said, “but “I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this “fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new “with you in my father’s kingdom;” *i. e.* CHRIST had taken the *cup* of sorrow unto his death, and lost himself in his own blood in death, and rose again, and is ascended into his high Heaven of Mercy, *to prepare a place for his Elect*, and from thence he *gave gifts* of his holy spirit, and rose Faith from death to life, and it is taken into the royal *priesthood* of Christ under the justice of the Father; then in a body of flesh and blood, they must *eat and drink* as HE did, and work the *works of Faith* as HE did, and *overcome* the world as HE did, and *lose themselves* in death in their own blood, under the justice of the Father, as HE did; for the *justice of the Father is justice to Faith*, and those works of Faith being done there, it is done in the *Father’s kingdom*; and as Christ did those things before them, and is now ascended into his throne of mercy, he now assists his Elect by his holy spirit, to do those things under the justice of the Father; and in this *he drinks of the vine, new with his Elect*, who are *in his Father’s kingdom*; because

because he assists them to work the works of Faith, and receive their incense of Faith, which is fruit of the vine of Faith in regeneration, *in his Father's kingdom*, which is his drinking of *the vine anew*, because it is in, and to his eternal joy, to see the increase of his kingdom of regenerated Faith; but when on earth it was in *Sorrow*: therefore in this manner the Elect must *eat HIS flesh, and drink HIS blood*, to have *part in Him*.

Again, observe, when JESUS bore the scoffs, scorns, malice, and persecution of Reason, then HE *eat the flesh of kings, captains, mighty men, &c.* which is the flesh of Reason, and in this he *overcome* the world; for as Faith fell for hearkening to Reason, Reason has power to persecute it; and when GOD took fallen Faith on him, and became CHRIST to redeem it, Reason had power to persecute *Him*:—But in *His* keeping the law of Faith; *His* true obedience to the power of the Father! *His* prayer! *His* travail through this life, in a sorrowful vale of death! *His* standing and working against, and overcoming the powers of sin, death, hell, and justice! and *HIS* losing himself in death in his own blood, under the justice of the Father! Now in this he eat his *own flesh* and drank his *own* blood; because he did it in fallen human nature, in a body of flesh and blood: and when Faith is rose from death to life, and taken into the royal priesthood of Christ, the Elect must do the same in a body of flesh and blood, by his divine assistance, which is *eating his flesh and drinking his blood*; and in the sorrowful heavy trouble, and travail of soul, they may, and will remember CHRIST HIMSELF was there! which is doing of it *in remembrance of HIM*. And (John's gospel vi. 56.) Jesus said, “he that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me and I in him;” *i. e.* as CHRIST took the *Cup* of sorrow unto his death, so must his Elect by his divine assistance; and as CHRIST lost himself in death in his own blood, under the justice of the Father, so must his Elect by his divine assistance,
and

and this is *eating his flesh, and drinking his blood*, in the grand union and works of Faith, which is *the Elect in him, and he in them*; and no other way can his flesh be eaten, and his blood drank, for salvation; for the Elect cannot *Pass over the justice of the Father*, nor the justice of the Father *pass over them*; for they must *pass under it*, and go *through it*.

Now, I would have Elect men observe what it is to *eat the passover of the paschal Lamb*, which is the *Lamb of*, or according to Reason, or rather to shew forth the power of God all over this creation, and his blessing and preservation to them that obey his word, and worship him according to the cherubical inspiration, that man may not be cut off from *His Blessing*, nor *His Blessing* from man: And mind, *not a bone of the Lamb was to be broken!* i. e. the *Power and Justice* of God will not be *broken!* although it may be *stayed* for a time: And to mind what it is to *eat the passover*, according to Christ and his disciples, for then the *destroying Angel* has *passed over* the man, and his life is preserved, and Christ has *prayed* for him, and is found worthy to enter the royal priesthood of Faith and Mercy! and to sup in spirit with the GREAT GOD OF MERCY! for although this *destroying Angel* may *pass over* man in this life; i. e. God's justice may be *stayed* on man, yet if he cannot enter the priesthood of Christ, he must die under the power of the *destroying Angel*; therefore blessed are those that come and *eat this passover*, for then they will pass from the yoke and bondage of Reason, to under the power and teachings of CHRIST.

Again, And to mind what it is to *pass under* the justice of the Father, in obedience, prayer, patience, &c. and to bear the evil report of Reason, his scoffs, his scorns, malice, oppression, persecution, &c. (for this is eating the flesh of kings, captains, and mighty men, or the flesh of Reason) for as Faith hearkened to Reason and fell, Reason has power to oppress and persecute Faith. And also to eat the flesh and drink the blood
of

of Christ, for Christ is the LAMB OF GOD, and lost himself in death in his own blood, yet *not a bone of him was broken!* i. e. the power of God in Christ, would not be *broken* in his *Redemption, Regeneration, Mercy, and Salvation* to his Elect! therefore I would have the Elect *understand*, they must *eat the paschal Lamb*, which is *the flesh of beasts, &c.* (according to the will and power of God) and the *flesh* of men of Reason: And *eat the flesh, and drink the blood of Christ*, then you will *sup* with him in spirit.

Moreover, I would not have any one think when the Apostles received the holy spirit to preach; that, that only was the *Seal* of the living God; no, for John the beloved received it with the others, and went forth and did preach; therefore, (Rev. v.) when "John saw the book sealed with seven seals, and no one to open it, he wept much:" here John was lost in himself, or his own blood, 'till CHRIST *opened the Book of Life*, i. e. to be found worthy of Christ, and receive his *Seal* for his spiritual grace and Mercy, therefore man may *know*, there is a great *Work* to be done!

Further, at this time the COMMISSION OF THE SPIRIT *is in act*, and the mighty works of Faith are done *internal*;—and for men to wade through the power of death and hell (in their own soul) is heavier to the soul than any external punishment, or temporal death! also now of days, the holy spirit is *active*, and when the VIRGIN DAUGHTER of Faith is born, she has to wade through the power of death and hell in the soul, which is very hard to be done, for in this travail the soul will find he must *eat the flesh of kings, captains, mighty men, &c.* and all *in itself*, i. e. by the power of Faith man must bear the wilds, temptations, and heavy threats of *his own Reason*, which is *eating his own flesh*; for the *Reason of man* will threaten the soul with destruction various ways to come: Also *it* will transform *itself* and tempt the soul, and *it* will promise great things if the soul will be guided by *him*: This the Elect may

L

expect

expect to have, and must bear from their *own Reason* in themselves.

Again, The spirit of Faith that is quickened from its womb, has a *Censer with Incense*, i. e. Faith is the *Censer*, and its prayer the *incense*, that ascends to heaven for Christ's divine assistance ; Also she finds herself in a fallen condition, therefore stands trembling before the power of God ! because she is surrounded with the power of Reason, and in a fallen state, and under justice, and has the mountain of death and hell, to wade and travail against, which is done in great *sorrow*, and by dint of *prayer* for the assistance of Jesus from heaven ; now this is human nature animated with divine Faith, that Christ took on him, and gathered his *Way* to his glorious kingdom ;—and this nature when called into the covenant of Faith, will follow its *Guide*, and work the *works of Faith*, and also truly find, that CHRIST the king of glory was in that very condition !

Then will man give up the kingdom of Reason to follow HIM ;—for the soul being called into the covenant of Faith, hearkens to this *Virgin Daughter* of Faith ; then when Faith is in distress, it offers its prayer, which ascends to JESUS, and He (by his divine incomes in secret) helps the soul through its trouble, because the soul is *called by the Messenger*, to come into the spiritual covenant of Faith, to *follow CHRIST* ! therefore this human nature animated with Faith, *gathers its Way* as Christ did, in a body of flesh and blood ; and this is to *eat the flesh and drink the blood* of CHRIST ! John's Gospel, (vi. 57.) "As the living Father hath sent ME, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me, even He shall live by ME," i. e. when Christ was here He was in the covenant or compact of Faith with them who sit in the power of the Father ;—and in the mystical union of Faith with them, in a body of flesh He worked the works of Faith, and gather HIS *Way in Sorrow* ! through sin, death, hell, and justice, to his *own* glory of mercy ! So, in like manner must the Elect, when

when they are called into the covenant of Faith to *Him*, then with *Him*, or by his divine assistance from heaven, must work the works of Faith, and gather *their Way*, according to the portion of the creature, in *Sorrow* as HE did, then they will *eat his flesh, and drink his blood*.

C H A P. X.

WHEN Reason hath transformed itself or themselves into a *Declaration from Heaven*, it gives them a new language, and from that raise a further emulation by preaching the word, which will over-power others; then men should submit to it; for if men strive against it, and come to declare it a lie, blasphemy, &c. with a desire to extirpate it out of the world, then the *internal Angel in justice* will charge them with spiritual murder, because it is *preaching* from the declaration of the messenger who came from God in the covenant of mercy: And this Messenger's declaration is *recorded in heaven*! for I would have men to *understand*, that the mystical union of Faith between the *Elect* and GOD their FOUNTAIN, is recorded in *Heaven*! and all the *holy fire, or incense of Faith* that ascends to heaven in *Prayer* for God's divine assistance, by which man prophecies of his own salvation, is *recorded* in the ever-living *Breast* of the GLORIOUS KING OF FAITH: Therefore when a Messenger is sent in the holy covenant of grace and mercy, to declare the will of God to his brethren, and prophecy of his glorious *Coming* in spirit, to seal and sanctify them for his glorious kingdom; that *Prophecy is recorded* in heaven, and in the souls of the *Elect* on this earth, beside being left on *literal record*.

Yea, this Messenger's *Declaration* is contrary to all the powers and efforts of Reason, that would *invade Heaven*;—nay, it is an enemy to his own Reason, for

he must *deny himself* of it.—And *Man* will find the *fruits and incense* of Faith that ascends to heaven and is acceptable to God, to be quite contrary to the *dark incense* of Reason, for that cannot ascend to be accepted in the holy covenant of Mercy ; therefore when Reason transforms into the *Declaration*, it is much delighted to preach the word, and his *own Way* if he can, but while the Messenger lives *He is the Adversary*.—Also after a while, you may see the spirit of Reason restless, for he wants something and cannot get at it, and this restlessness of soul declares the man is not accepted : Further, he will transform himself in spirit, and dwell at times, on different parts of the records or *Declaration* ; for the spirit of Reason will say, *Lo ! here is peace*, and, *Lo ! there is peace* ; and *lead the soul through dry places to seek rest, but can find none* ; Neither can he flourish in his *own kingdom* while the Messenger lives ; because *He is the Adversary*, for then *Satan is bound* ; now in this condition there is great trouble and agitation of soul, and grievous to bear ; but it is no more than Reason eat Reason, because disappointed in his *own desire* ; therefore doth not amount to the *Supper of the great GOD* ; which is *to eat the flesh of kings, captains, &c. i. e.* to bear the wilds, temptations, and persecutions of Reason *within and without*, by the power and prayer of Faith ; also in this lively compact, and priesthood of Faith, gather their way through justice to *Mercy* ! Thus the Elect when called by the *Messenger*, are taken into the spiritual *Covenant* and compact of Faith, and fed on the divine incomes of God which is *Life* ! but Reason is left with the bare letter, and to feed on itself, which is *Death*.

Further, This GLORIOUS COVENANT, or compact of *Faith*, is this ; GOD created Adam of human nature animated with divine Faith, which is the nature of God, so they was the *Children of God*, but they broke the law of Faith, when they *hearkened* to Reason, and by that fell under the power of death, and was wholly

wholly under the justice of the Father; and also subject to the angel of the law of Reason:—thus the *Children of God* was tempted by Reason into the *Priesthood of Reason*, i. e. the *Priesthood of the law, or of Aaron*; and Reason was, and is very desirous the *Elect* should inherit his wisdom, which is the *knowledge of good and evil* in that Priesthood, for this wisdom, Reason will worship as God:—But GOD was graciously pleased to promise he would come and redeem his *own Children*: Further, when GOD was graciously pleased, *He communed* from his GLORIOUS THRONE with the spirit of Faith in the Elect (when it was rose from death to *Life* above the power of the *Angel* of the law of Reason) by which men grew strong in Faith, and come to prophecy of their own salvation:—Now, this is the *mystical union or spiritual compact* of Faith between God and his *Children*, in HIS ROYAL PRIESTHOOD.

Moreover, when God was graciously pleased to *make all things New*, i. e. to turn HIS glorious kingdom into *Mercy*, which is the *Kingdom of Heaven*, for himself and his Elect, *He* left the glory of the *Father*, and of justice, and transmuted himself into his *own* created nature of Adam, which was human/animated with Faith, and took the SONSHIP on himself, which was subject to the power and justice of the *Father*;—thus God the *Father* became God the *Son*; or the God of *Justice*, the God of MERCY!—and became KING of the *holy Gospel*! KING of Faith and Mercy! Elder BROTHER of the Elect, in the *holy Gospel*, who serve the younger! LORD of all-quickenings power to Faith! Royal BRIDEGROOM to the *Virgin Daughter* of Faith! FATHER of Regenerated Faith! And the GREAT GOD and KING of the *New Heaven and Earth*! &c. Because he came to seek his *Elect*! and redeem them, and gather them to his glorious Kingdom, which is the kingdom of Faith! glory! and mercy!

Hence, (Matt. xiii. 44.) JESUS saith, “Again the
“*Kingdom of Heaven* is like to treasure hid in a field;
“the

“ the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and
 “ for joy thereof, goeth and selleth all that he hath, and
 “ buyeth the field.’ This parable declares the *Union
 and Compact* of Faith and mercy between God and his
 Elect ; for when God was in the glory of the Father,
 and of justice, HE received the *Prayer or Incense* of
 Faith for his divine mercy from the *Elect of old*, which
 ascended up to God in his glory, and God was graciously
 pleased to *commune* with them in spirit, that he would
 become the God of *Mercy* ! then they prophesied of
 CHRIST which was *Salvation* ! and by this mystical
Union and Compact of Faith, between God and his
Elect, God well knew, and repeatedly found, the in-
 crease of his *own Children*, which was *bid* from Reason,
 (from the beginning) in this world, which is the *Field* ;
 yea this *mystical Union* of Faith, God always *hideth* from
 Reason, why ? because the internal Angel in justice will
 keep them out : Also in this sacred *Union* of Faith,
 God hath great *Joy* in his children, as they are his great
 and only *treasure* ! whereby he will compleat the *king-
 dom of heaven*, in the full glory of Faith !

Therefore, for his unbounded *Love and Mercy* to his
 children ! and for the great *Joy* and glory to come, as
 GOD will have with them, and they with him, HE
 left the glory of the Father, and of *Justice*, (which was
 all he then enjoyed) and invested it on *Moses* and *Elias*,
 then transmuted himself into his own created nature of
 Adam, and became a true Son to the *Power* of the *Fa-
 ther*, to *seek* his own brethren the Elect, who are of and
 for the *kingdom of Heaven* ! Further, when he was here
 declaring his holy Gospel, the *kingdom of heaven* was *bid*
 from Reason ; indeed they might take the outward
 word or letter, but could not enter the spiritual compact
 and priesthood of Faith, therefore, “ It is not given to
 “ them to know the mysteries of the kingdom of hea-
 “ ven.”—Yes, JESUS went through the powers of
 Reason, and gave up his godhead life, which was what
 he enjoyed here, for the redemption of his Elect ! which
 purchased

purchased them ; and is ascended into the high heaven of mercy ! thus IS, and WILL BE, the glory of the *Father* compleated, in the high and mighty glory of the SON, in the *Compact* of Faith with the Elect.

“ *Again* (Jesus said) the kingdom of heaven is like “ unto a merchant man seeking goodly pearls : who, “ when he found one pearl of great price ; he went and “ sold all he had, and bought it,” (Matt. xiii. 45.) This is to the *Seed* of Faith, *likened unto a merchant seeking* a good purchase or exchange ; for the *Seed* of Faith has the kingdom and priesthood of Reason to exchange for the priesthood and kingdom of Faith, which is death for life ; and they must *seek* him, who can and will give that exchange, *i. e.* when they are called by the voice of God in the Messenger, and Faith is risen from death to life, and enters into the lively compact of Faith, then in this *mystical union*, will know they are in the true way for heaven, and will follow their *Guide*, and offer the true incense which ascends to heaven ;—and in love and union with their brethren, will *gather their Way*, by prayer and God’s divine assistance, to the spiritual birth, seal, and sanctification of the KING OF FAITH, which is the *pearl of great price*, and the Elect must part with all *to buy this pearl, i. e.* to part with *all* their gathered knowledge of Reason from the Letter, and become a *Child* ! yea, their whole possession, which is the Kingdom and Priesthood of Reason ! so that *nothing* remain to hinder the soul from working the *WORKS OF FAITH*,—then he will *Sell* the kingdom of hell, for to *Buy* the *kingdom of heaven*.

For, As GOD who sat in the glory of the Father, and of justice, left that glory and become man, and worked the *works of Faith*, to redeem his Elect, and became the God of mercy to them ; *Man* must leave his *own* conceited knowledge, and the glory of this world, to work the *works of Faith*, as is the portion given him, to *follow God*, then in the *lively Union* of Faith, God becomes united in Spirit to his Elect, and
the

the Elect to God, to bring forth the fruits of Faith for glory: for in this Compact or *Union* of Faith, the *Prayer* ascends to God, by which man is made to prophecy of his own salvation! therefore *Blessed* is he that will *lose all*, even his *Life*, for the sake of *regenerated* Faith; for in this heavenly compact of Faith, man will *find his Life* again in CHRIST, for he is king of Faith. Hence all the fruits and prayer of Faith, ascends to him in his glory, as a *sweet incense*; and CHRIST will give him his life anew, with a CROWN of everlasting glory!

C H A P. XI.

AGAIN, (Matt. xvii.) Jesus said, "If ye have Faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, remove to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible to you." This *Mountain* to be removed, is the *power* of sin, death, hell and justice, from the souls of the Elect, and by the *power* of Faith as a *grain of mustard seed*: Now as I have said, CHRIST who is the king of Faith, he only has the essential spirit of Faith, and in him it is a *full seed*, by which he is able to compleat his almighty works, both in heaven and earth, as in the beginning he created Adam of his own divine nature, then there was Faith sown into *Earth*, and by generation has come forth many of that royal seed, who are the *Sons of God*; also as aforesaid he became Man, and a brother with or to his own Elect, and is recorded among them as the son of Abraham, according to the genealogy of Faith; so now he has worked the works of redemption, and ascended into the high heaven of mercy.

I would have the Elect to *understand* that *Faith in them* may be likened to a *grain of mustard seed*, why? because the Faith in them assisted by the divine incomes of

of JESUS from heaven, they will be brought up before God according to regeneration, to be regenerated: therefore BLESSED is he that can enter into the priesthood, and follow up to the *spiritual Birth*; for if man enter the kingdom of heaven, he must work the works of Faith, to be called upon by the DIVINE MAJESTY, distinct to, and for himself; and of God, to be found worthy of his spiritual birth, and holy sanctification; for by *Regeneration*, Faith is made the *Essential Life* of man to be raised for glory, for the kingdom of heaven: for in Elect man is found Faith to offer its prayer, and by God's divine assistance, to grow up to the kingdom of heaven, and then the soul will be in great union with his brethren, because this is the Faith and LOVE OF CHRIST! in his united church, in his KINGDOM of REGENERATED FAITH! so woe to them by whom offences come!

Therefore when the Elect are called, and die from their gathered knowledge of Reason, and quickened into the knowledge of Faith, which is their OWN by the voice of God in the Messenger and quickening power from heaven; then when the spiritual daughter is *born*, that man will enter into the spiritual compact and royal priesthood of Faith, which is the mystical union and spiritual communion, by the spirit of Faith in them, with God their *Fountain*; and by this heavenly light, man will find himself to be full of darkness and death, and in the midst of the *Wilds*, temptations, oppressions and persecutions of Reason, not only without, but in their own soul, which is the worst of all, for it must be removed to inherit the SEAL of the king of Faith.

Further, those *Powers* of death and hell being in the soul of man, and of-times acting forth with great power are those *Mountains to be removed*, which is impossible to be done according to Reason: but Faith being in the compact and priesthood of JESUS, and oppressed by those powers, it will *offer its Prayer*, which ascends to heaven for *divine assistance*, i. e. the influence of the

holy spirit of JESUS, which HE will be graciously pleased to send for the dint of true prayer: then the soul by influence of this holy and essential *grain* of Faith, receive power to *remove* (internal) *mountains*; for I would have the Elect *understand*, as Faith came from God in the creation for *generation*, so do Faith come from God, to raise and help created Faith on its way to spiritual *Regeneration*.

Again, The Elect, when in the *Compact of Faith*, will at times have great fear, darkness, oppression, temptation, persecution, &c. which proceeds from the consequence of Reason, death, hell, and justice in the soul of man, endeavouring to devour Faith if possible; for those are *mountains* in the soul of man and in Faith's way; now it is on the part of the Elect to seek the removal of those *mountains*, which is *impossible* to be done by or according to Reason, but to Faith it is *possible*; for when the Elect are in their own compact, and oppressed by the power of Reason, then! if the soul can motion forth with prayer in love and union with his brethren, and can and will do, or suffer any thing for the sake of the kingdom of heaven, in this *royal priesthood* of Faith, having given up the kingdom and priesthood of Reason, love his enemies, &c. (not *doubting* the priesthood of Faith, nor God's help from heaven) he will have the divine assistance from heaven, and this *mountain* will be *removed* by the power of Faith.

Yea, it is the nature of Faith to *Pray and not to faint*, why? because it is very eager to work its way in spirit, as near its own Angel as possible, which is CHRIST in *Glory*, and while under justice offer at his royal feet, which is done by *Prayer*, to remove internal *mountains* out of the way: for as every Elect may be likened unto a *grain* of Faith, and for the kingdom of heaven; therefore they must work the works of Faith, that those internal *Mountains may be removed* through their *prayer and fasting*; i. e. *praying* for God's divine assistance, and *patiently* waiting till it comes; for when Jesus is graciously
pleased

pleased to make his royal priesthood known from his glorious throne to mortal man, to invite the Elect, his brethren, to enter in, that God should rule over Faith in them, by his divine incomes; the overflowing of his holy spirit, or the essential *grain* of Faith, is so transcendently powerful and glorious, that one glimpse will make impure Reason dissolve to chaos, if his divine will should move him; and also convert fallen Faith to his own will and pleasure: Therefore JESUS is KING and only ruler of Faith in his royal priesthood, for HIS holy spirit flows forth so infinite pure, glorious, and all powerful in himself, that he can by his glorious wisdom send his divine assistance to Faith in man according to its need, or as it *ask in prayer*, by which Faith is helped; and Faith will return grateful thanks, which ascends to heaven; for Faith came from God in creation, and by his ALMIGHTY POWER he redeemed that Faith; and Faith comes from God to help Faith through this sore journey of flesh;—and Faith comes from God to give spiritual *Birth* to his holy covenant of grace, and seal the soul for his glorious kingdom; and returns to him again from the soul of man, in spirit; which is the *sweet incense* that ascends to God: Thus it is Faith on Faith; and Faith united to Faith, in *Prayer, divine assistance, and thanksgiving*;—i. e. the incense of Faith ascends in *prayer* and thanksgiving to God, from Elect man; and divine assistance descends from God to Elect man; and this friendly mystical union is the priesthood of Faith, which leads to life eternal!

Further, when elect man is entered into this royal priesthood by being born to it, and offering the *true Prayer* of Faith, which is the works of Faith; and when answered from heaven by the overflowings of the holy spirit of JESUS, which comes so *sweet* and infinite *pure*, to the spirit of Faith in man, as if it would convert the soul to *ALL divine purity*; and when the soul has tasted of this divine blessing, it is in a longing condition for, and mourning after more, and will seek to

get as near Jesus in spirit as possible, because it will make the soul speak the language of Faith, and prophecy of his own salvation, which no one can do but by entering into this ROYAL PRIESTHOOD: So the children of God must leave the whole world for this, that when they are oppressed by the powers of death and hell in themselves, and offer the *prayer* of Faith, and *doubt not* in this royal priesthood (for the union of Faith is so great between God and his children) that *nothing will be impossible to them*, for whatsoever they ASK in pure Faith *they will receive*, and those *Mountains* will be removed.

Also, when the Elect are thus united in the royal priesthood, to work the works of Faith, to *follow Christ*, then, what love will flow forth among brethren! for every one is seeking forgiveness! and ready to forgive: *Nay*, even lay down their lives for each other! (if occasion requires) why? because this is the CHURCH of CHRIST, and he rules over them! therefore they must *not be separated!* "For (Jesus said) where two or three "are gathered together in my name, there am I in the "midst of them," *i. e.* when HIS divine assistance is asked in Faith's *Prayer*, HE will answer by his holy spirit from heaven; that the soul *shall* be assisted to work the works of Faith, in HIS *united* CHURCH, to the great joy of the brethren: for as I said, it is on the part of the Elect to seek by *prayer* to remove the fumes of death and hell, which is as *Mountains* in the soul, that stand in Faith's *Way*; which is done by PATIENCE, MEEKNESS, LONG-SUFFERING, &c. and by working the works of Faith to *follow Christ*, the *King* of Faith and mercy; then HE removes the grand *Mountain of Justice*, by giving the soul spiritual *Birth* to his holy covenant of mercy:—and of *Death*, by raising the soul to life eternal in his glorious kingdom.

Again, As in the beginning Faith came from God, HE being the full *Seed* or essential *Grain*, from whence all other *grains or seeds* of Faith proceed; and HE
sowed

sowed himself in person into this created Faith; then call the Elect his brethren, and worked the works of Faith; therefore of consequence, the Elect must work the *Works of Faith* to follow JESUS: "For (he saith) "whosoever shall do the *Will* of my Father which is in "heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother," (Matt. xii. 50.) Now the *Will* of the Father is what he himself became a SON to do, *i. e.* to work the *Works of Faith* under the *Justice of the Father*, against all the *Powers* of Reason, sin, death, and hell, and by the *Power* of Faith, in mystical union with them who sit in the *Glory of the Father*, HE gathered his *Way* through those *Powers* and the *Justice* of the Father, to his own glorious Kingdom of *Mercy*, and the Elect when *Called* must do in like manner, according to their *Portion* given:—For as Faith fell wholly under the *Justice of the Father*, and was subject to the angel of the law of Reason, it must, in obedience to the power of God, gather its *Way* through the powers of Reason, Hell, &c. in *Prayer, Meekness, Love, Mercy, and Charity*. and *MOUNTAINS will be removed*; then the soul will be called upon, through the *Justice* of the Father, and there must give himself up to that *Justice* in his own blood,—and there lose himself in his own blood! before he can be born in spirit, or translated to the mercy of the Son: Now if the soul do this, he will do the will of the Father and be *saved*; therefore Jesus saith (Matt. vii. 21.) "Not every one that saith unto "me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of "heaven; but he that doeth the *Will* of my Father "which is in heaven." From hence men may in some measure see what it is to enter into the *Priesthood* of Faith.

Again, When JESUS found no fruit on the fig-tree, He said, "Let no fruit grow on thee, hence forward, "for ever," and it withered away: then his disciples saw it, and marvelled, saying, "how soon is the fig-tree "withered away." This fig-tree signifies the spirit of Reason

Reason *in* the Elect, that will be *withered away* by the *Power* of Faith, and it is the same thing in consequence as to remove (internal) mountains, that Faith become the essential life to be raised to glory ! also the *fig-leaves* are acts and excuses of Reason, and not only so, but also the *wild priesthood* of Reason, wherein man will feign the knowledge of the *Will* of God, priesthood of Faith, and kingdom of heaven, at the same time know nothing of it, and if possible possess less ; yet he will preach the knowledge he has gathered from the outward word or letter, and render it according to his own judgment, which is as *leaves on the fig tree*, *i. e.* the judgment of Reason on the doctrine of Christ, and excuses they will make to cover their own evil : for in Reason and its priesthood is found no fruit for the kingdom of heaven ; but these conceited-knowledge, self righteousness, and plenty of excuses, which are all death to the soul, and must be removed in the Elect, that Faith may *follow Christ* in his royal priesthood ; for when Faith is quickened from its womb or seed, *as a grain of mustard seed*, and it grows up and work the works of Faith, in and for regeneration, and become the essential soul for the resurrection, the *fig tree* will be *withered away* or rooted up.

Therefore (Mat. xxi, 21.) JESUS said, “ If ye have “ Faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which “ is done to the fig tree, but also, if ye shall say unto “ this mountain, be thou removed, and be thou cast “ into the sea, it shall be done,” which is not to *doubt* the power of Faith in the *royal priesthood*, for in this compact and priesthood of Faith, the union is so great between Christ in glory, and the *incense* of Faith in prayer, produced by the Elect, that they *will* receive *Power* from heaven, to remove internal *Mountains*, or over power Reason, by the power of Faith : and (Jesus saith) “ all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, be- “ lieving, ye shall receive.” So I would have the Elect mind, as JESUS worked against and *conquered* the powers of
of

of death, hell, and justice, by the powers of Faith, the Elect must *follow* HIM according to their *Portion of Faith*, for Christ is the great and *first fruits*.

Moreover, when Faith is sown by the power of the holy spirit of God, into the womb or seed of Faith in the Elect, which is but as a *small grain of mustard seed*, yet by that power it will quicken and motion forth in prayer for divine assistance, and be taken into the priesthood of Faith, and by divine assistance, work the works, and grow up through justice in *regeneration*, to the seal of the king of heaven: thus Faith for regeneration, is likened by the holy spirit unto a *grain of mustard seed*, which is but a small seed, yet by its prayer and divine assistance from heaven, it will grow up through justice and wrath, to the holy covenant of grace and Mercy, (then it will be the essential life of man) and so it is *grown* to, or become a *Tree* for the kingdom of heaven.

Again, in this holy compact and priesthood of Faith, should be, nay IS—incomparable brotherly love! why? because it is the love of Faith! then such a CHURCH IS in the strong union of Faith with each other, and with Christ their King: Also it is the nature of Faith to get as near in spirit to JESUS as possible, for his divine assistance unto *Salvation*; and as *the love and union of Faith* brings us to Christ for salvation; the same *Love* will unite his Church:—also if a man want salvation, he must go to CHRIST for it, and he may say, “he “can and doth,” yet at the time cannot come to the *Union* of the united church of Christ in his *royal Priesthood*: now if he cannot do the *less*, he cannot do the *great*; and if he cannot love his brother in *this Faith*, he cannot love God; for it is the nature of Faith to *forgive*, and rejoice in forgiveness. Therefore JESUS said (Luke xvii.) “If thy brother trespass against thee “seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn “again to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgive “him,” and the apostles said unto the Lord, *increase our Faith*, and the Lord said, “if ye had Faith as a grain of
“mustard

“mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, “be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted “in the sea, and it should obey you.” This *sycamine-tree* (or sycamore) is the same in effect as the *fig-tree*, or the removal of internal *Mountains* from the Elect; for this *sycamine-tree* is the seed and spirit of Reason and its wild priesthood; for when Reason transforms itself into any declaration from heaven, it will take it into its own wild priesthood, and preach it according to their imagination, and flourish forth before men with great expression, to tempt the Elect into the wild priesthood of Reason.

Now, the *Wild Priesthood* of Reason is to excuse Reason for a time, and they will not fail to plead excuses; for the best produce of this *sycamine-tree* is conceited knowledge, self-righteousness, pretended forgiveness, and plenty of excuses to *cover* their own evil, and thus flourish like green leaves on this *Tree*: also from this *sycamine-tree* proceed spiritual darkness, temptation, self-conceited preservation, vain excuses, anger, dislike, unforgiveness, deceit and self-cunning, spiritual thieving, &c. which is the seed of further evil; and this is a *plant* that God did not plant in the Elect, therefore it must be *rooted up*, and must be done by the power and prayer of Faith: NOW when an external tempter comes, he will be disappointed by the *Power* of Faith, as if his self-cunning was *struck dead* in his soul! and the internal powers of Reason *are* overcome by the dint of Faith's prayer and divine assistance from heaven in the *royal Priesthood* of Faith; then the evil *Plant* will be *rooted up* and *wither away*, or perish as the waters of Reason that are cast off from *Faith*.

C H A P. XII.

Again, The *priesthood of Faith* (as aforesaid) is the mystical union and heavenly communion, by the power and prayer of Faith, with and to Christ in glory; but
men

men must be *born* to it, before they can enjoy it, even as men are born into this world to enjoy the things of this world ; for as Moses had Reason to work upon in the souls of men ; JESUS had Faith to work upon in his Elect ; For on the *fig-tree*, *i. e.* Reason, was found no fruit for Jesus, and it *withered away* : Therefore when Jesus is graciously pleased to give any one *spiritual Birth* to his holy Covenant of grace and *Mercy*, and send him back to tell his brethren, that Messenger calls to Faith in the Elect ; and when the *Call* takes root in the soul, it truly makes the soul sensible of its own *nakedness and lost condition* ; and can bring forth nothing but vain excuses for what he has done, which are the *fig-leaves* of Reason, to *hide his nakedness* if possible ; and when he forsakes his gathered knowledge of Reason and vain excuses, he will lose himself in this hard water of death ! and by true prayer, Faith will be quickened out of its death, then the *Virgin* daughter of Faith is *born* to the promise of Christ ! NOW, this is the *first Birth* to Faith for *regeneration*, and is called the *birth of water*, because the soul works under the justice of the internal Angel or *Cherubim and flaming sword* : But then the spirit of Faith is *quickened* for to do its work and go its *Way* for *regeneration*.

Also, Faith being so *Born* from its womb or seed, can offer its *own Prayer*, which is *incense* that ascends to God above the power of the internal Angel, because it is the will of the DIVINE MAJESTY, being only under the justice of the Father, and at times has divine assistance from heaven, and will grow strong, and come to prophecy of its own Salvation !—This was the very state of *Adam* (or condition) and Elect of old, and in the time of the Law ; for when born the first birth for regeneration, they worked the Works of Faith, against the powers of Reason, death, hell and justice, and were obedient to the *cherubical Law*, *i. e.* the Law of Reason ; and at the hour of death *they* were translated to under the Mercy of the Son ! Now this is the *Priesthood of*

Faith, wherein is found the spirit of prophecy for salvation ; and on, or in this priesthood of Faith, CHRIST came and established his holy covenant of Grace and Mercy.

Again, I would have the Elect *understand*, the works of Faith for regeneration was the same in the days of old, as now, for they prophesied the God of justice would become the God of mercy, and redeem and raise them to glory at the last day ; then at the hour of death they were translated to under the mercy of the SON, and died in the *Bed of mercy* ; *i. e.* the spirit of Faith in-them, was called up and united to the spirit of God, as a *Son and Redeemer* to them ; then they could truly say, “ here is Christ come ; ” then entered into death, and are recorded in the *book of life* ! *i. e.* in the memory of the *ever-living* God of Mercy, to be raised to his *Glorious Kingdom* !

Even so, Now, under the declaration of the Gospel ; for when Faith is born of its womb or seed, it has the internal powers to work against, and must be brought up to the *prophecy of its own salvation*, as the Elect of old did ; for although Christ has *Come* in person, yet he must *Come* in spirit, to seal the soul for his glorious kingdom : *otherwise*, Moses is the prophet to that soul, which Christ doth not come to in spirit ; therefore the Elect must *seek* to enter into this royal *Priesthood* of Faith ; for it is not to read the Letter only, and thereby think you have the promise of Christ, for that is the priesthood of Reason ; for Reason has and will take the *Promises* to the Elect, and *prophecies* of the Elect, into his own priesthood, setting them forth according to the spirit of Reason, which make them say, “ they shall inherit them ; ” But *Faith* must be born the first birth to *regeneration*, for to spiritually know what the *Promise* of Christ is ; then will work the *works of Faith*, to inherit that promise.

Therefore JESUS said, (Mat. xxv.) “ Then shall
“ the *kingdom of heaven* be likened unto *ten virgins*,
“ which

“ which took their lamps and went forth to meet the “ bridegroom ; and five were *wise*, and five were *foolish*.” This *kingdom of heaven* was, and is, the declaration of the holy Gospel or promise of JESUS to his Elect : For the glorious *Declaration* of Salvation in the holy Gospel, far transcend any other, because men in soberness of mind, must confess themselves under the power of sin and cannot save themselves ; hence when Jesus declared his holy Gospel, it *shined* forth in its glorious purity, like to a *Lamp* of sweet saving *Incense burning* before the power and glory of the Father, and Elect men unto salvation ; yea, the *Call* in the declaration of the holy Gospel, was so great to his Elect, that many of the seed of Reason transformed themselves, and took the outward word : NOW the words of JESUS are as *Lamps*, being the greatest utterance in the whole world, that when men take his word and preach it up, it *shines* before other men as a *Lamp*, thus both Faith and Reason took the word of Jesus and followed :—But as *Adam* was the first man of Faith for *generation* ; CHRIST was the second man of Faith (and came) for *regeneration* : therefore Faith must be born from its womb or seed for *regeneration* to the promise of Christ, before it can follow HIM in his royal priesthood of Faith ; for this is to be *understood* by the Elect, that Christ came to work life out of death, as he saith, (John xii.) “ Verily, “ verily I say unto you, except a corn of wheat fall into “ the ground and die, it abideth alone, but if it die, it “ bringeth forth much fruit,” *i. e.* except the spirit in the word centers in the womb of Faith in the soul and there rest, and reduce the soul down to *death* in spirit, there to know and fear the *second* death ; then out of this *death* by prayer, to quicken into a new *life*, which life is Faith, *quickened or born*, its first birth for regeneration ; and if this is not done, the word *abideth alone*, as it has not effected the soul, so as to bring those things to pass according to Faith for regeneration ; but if done, which will be in the Elect, then the soul will enter into

the royal priesthood, and bring forth fruit for the *kingdom of heaven*.—NOW when JESUS uttered his holy Gospel, there was some of the seed of Reason came and took his words, as well as the Elect; and being first declared, it took the souls of men in their *virgin-state*, relative to the holy Gospel, *i. e.* in what the seed of Faith would bring forth, and what the seed of Reason would bring forth by the declaration: For as they took the declaration and promise of Jesus, which are as *Lamps* to them, and *went forth to meet the Bridegroom*, *i. e.* to *meet Jesus* in spirit, after he ascended into his high *GLORY of MERCY*, in spiritual and holy marriage with them. (ver. 2.) “But five were wise, and “five were foolish.”—Those *wise Virgins* are the Elect, that the *spirit* in the word centered in the womb of Faith, *and died*, then quickened Faith into active *Life* from its womb or seed, and this is the spiritual *Virgin daughter* of Faith, born from its womb, and enters into the royal priesthood, and will work the works of Faith against all the powers of Reason, death, hell, &c. for to this spiritual *virgin Daughter*, *is given a Censer with incense*, *i. e.* Faith is the censer, and its prayer the incense, which ascends to JESUS in his high *Glory of Mercy*, and is found worthy of Jesus to enter into the royal spiritual *Marriage* with him! THUS, *the wise Virgins took oil in their Vessels with their Lamps*; *i. e.* the spirit in the word, quickened Faith in the womb, and it come forth into act, to bring forth the fruits of Faith, according to the word, meet for Marriage, with the BRIDEGROOM of heaven or KING of Faith; therefore the Elect can declare the *Word* of Jesus, which is the *Lamp*; and not only so, but bring forth the fruit of Faith according to the *Word*, which is *Oil in their vessels with their Lamps*.

The *foolish virgins* were the seed of Reason, that transformed themselves into the Declaration, and *took the words of JESUS* which are the *Lamps*:—But as the spirit in the word, *did not die*, to quicken Faith in them,

them, *it abode alone*, why? because their souls was *barren of the good ground*, which is the womb of Faith for regeneration, therefore they could bring forth no fruits, by or according to the word, for the spiritual and holy marriage with the bridegroom: NOW as aforesaid, when Jesus declared his holy gospel, it *took the soul in a virgin state*, why? because it was a *New language*, and as so, are called *Virgins* in the declaration, which took Faith by the power of God, into the *Priesthood of Faith*; but Reason *took* the outward word, and *went* into its own *wild priesthood or water*, i. e. the great river Euphrates that runs in the Land of *Nod*, in the souls of men:—Thus Faith and Reason *took their lamps*, and *went forth to meet the Bridegroom*, i. e. Christ in spirit. And Reason by the *Lamp*, which are the words, he *took and went his Way*, was and is, in himself, very sure he should *meet Christ*, and greatly preach and contend for the same thing, as is his imagination on the *Words of Christ*; but as the Word *abode alone*, and did not *die to quicken* Faith in them, they judged of it according to their imaginary wisdom, and think themselves wonderful wise; but as there is no *fruits of Faith* brought forth in all this; therefore they are called "*foolish virgins*" in the holy gospel.

Further, "While the bridegroom tarried they all "slumbered and slept," yea, JESUS, the *Bridegroom*, always did and will *tarry to come* in spirit to assist the spirit of Reason, because it is of a contrary nature to the spirit of Faith, and gathers a contrary *Way*; for Reason will take the words of Jesus, which are their *Lamps*, into their wild priesthood of Reason, and there judge and suggest them, by and according to their imagination; and if they can will tempt Faith into their priesthood, which will give liberty to the soul, to seek the *Kingdom* of Reason; for the *outward word* is sufficient for them, because it is all they can have:—Thus, Reason is *bound up* in himself and his kingdom, and his priesthood which is full of excuses to cover their acts,

i. e.

i. e. contrary to the words of Christ, turning his words so as to serve their present purpose; now in this, *they slumber and sleep*, in respect to the words of CHRIST, and dead to the works of Faith,—and it is *midnight with them*, in the sight of God, let them think what they will to the contrary, as the life of Reason shines at present.

Again, “Then all those virgins arose and trimmed “their lamps.” Those are the *wise virgins* who entered, and will enter, into the *Royal Priesthood* of Faith, and work the *works of Faith*; for when a Messenger comes in the Priesthood of Faith, he finds Faith *sleeping, and midnight* with them also, as it has been silence in the nether heaven of Faith, and Faith captivated by the power of Reason; then there is a *CRY or prophecy* by the living Messenger, that CHRIST will come, and call this spiritual *Virgin* daughter of Faith, to his holy *Marriage*; therefore “*go you out to meet him*,” which is done by the power and prayer of Faith, which ascends up to God, and they receive HIS *divine assistance*, to wade through the powers of Reason; and in MERCY, MEEKNESS, OBEDIENCE, LOVE, CHARITY, &c. *patiently waiting* and expecting his coming; and to keep the soul in a condition to *meet him*, according to the warning given! and to leave behind them as *filth*, that which Reason embrace as great *treasure*! Now this is *trimming their Lamps* in the priesthood of Faith, under the holy gospel when the CRY comes from heaven; for by working the *works of Faith*, they are brought up to prophecy of their own *Salvation, i. e.* of his coming in spirit to seal them for his glorious kingdom; thus, *those wise virgins* have not only the *promise* by the declaration, of the coming of Christ, but by working the works of Faith, they receive the sacred incomes of CHRIST, which confirms the *Promise* in the declaration and are brought up to prophecy as aforesaid, which is *Oil in their vessels with their lamps*! thus, *the wise virgins* (who are of Faith) *took their lamps*, and gather their
their

their *Way* to Life ; and the *foolish virgins* (who are of Reason) *take their lamps*, and gather their *Way* to death, and all from the same declaration.

Yea, *Those foolish virgins*, in the time of life and health, never will enter the priesthood of Faith to go up to the holy *Marriage*, because their *own cunning* keep them from the works ; also they will slight and condemn the messenger, that comes to invite to the holy *Marriage* : But when death comes, the internal *Angel* in justice, who is as *Moses*, *opens his book*, wherein is written justice and death to the soul, then instead of being called to by *Jesus*, are called to by *Moses*, who is buried in the soul, and is such a man's prophet ; then they say, "*give us of your oil for our lamps are gone out,*" *i. e.* the letter or promise of *Jesus* was no use to them, for want of the works and fruits of Faith ; but would willingly *die the death of the righteous*, therefore they cry, "*give us of your oil ?*" *i. e.* of your fruits of Faith, but the answer is, *No ! you must go and buy for yourselves,* *i. e.* you must deny yourself to Reason, and *work the works of Faith, and follow Jesus* (if you inherit his divine mercy) *while it is day* ; then they would fain go back, and try at a new life, but no, they are shut in and must die under the seal of the internal *Angel* in justice ! then, *what would not man give in exchange for his soul ?*

Again, *Those wise virgins* being in the *Priesthood*, (and worked the works) of Faith, *then* when death comes, Faith is called to by *JESUS* through the justice of the *Father*, which is justice to Faith, and far above the justice of the angel, Why ? because the justice of the *Father* is justice to Faith, and the justice of the *Angel* is justice to Reason :—But Faith being called above the Angel, and the Angel will not let you go back, because this *Call* to Faith is as in the days of old ; only this, *GOD* is become a *SON*, therefore the *Call* is high up in regeneration, and is "*Adam* (or Faith) "*where art thou ?*" Here Faith is called upon for breaking its *own Law*, *i. e.* Faith has hearkened to the
voice

voice of Reason, and fell under the power of Reason and its Angel, because in the beginning Faith was tempted into the priesthood of Reason and died, and must come back by regeneration; therefore when Faith is born its *first birth* for regeneration, it is born to the *promise of Christ* and is the *birth of water*; then it will work its works and receive *divine assistance from Heaven*, to go through the powers of Reason, and is found worthy to be *called* upon by JESUS through the justice of the Father; and there it will find, although it has worked in the *nether waters*, and received sweet incomes at times, yet its works cannot save itself, for the question is,—you have hearkened to Reason, and what have you done to save yourself, or be united to Christ in holy *marriage*, for *He* only has kept the *Law of Faith*, from his birth to his death? Now here the soul confesseth his guilt and unworthiness without excuse, for this very state is at the *PREROGATIVE of God!* therefore no *fig-leaves* can appear!—You may look back from whence you came, but—the angel will not let you go back:—beside *those waters are turned into blood*, and no more life there! Now forward to the holy *Marriage with JESUS* you must go, or no *Life Eternal!*—then the eager prayer of Faith, from the pure virgin daughter, (born from the womb or seed of Faith for regeneration) then in distress, ascends to CHRIST for help, and he is graciously pleased to unite himself in spirit with this *Virgin daughter of Faith*, and there begets to himself the *spiritual Son* of Faith, who is born of this pure Virgin daughter to Christ, and by him sealed for his *kingdom of mercy and glory!* then the soul dies in the bed of mercy to be raised for glory;—for if after this your natural life is given you, to be sent back to tell your brethren, then you are a Messenger of Christ, and your *Declaration* will tell from whence you came; this IS the HOLY and SPIRITUAL MARRIAGE with JESUS,—and the spiritual birth to enter the *kingdom of heaven*:—therefore, blessed are *those wise virgins* who will

will enter into *this holy marriage*;—for the promise to the Elect IS, they shall bear a spiritual son of Faith to God, but in *old age*, for it is mostly done at the hour of death, as aforesaid.

Further, I would have the Elect *understand*; when Faith fell, the man Adam and Eve not only fell under the justice of the *Father*, but also into the *Priesthood* of Reason through temptation, to become *as gods*, to *know good and evil* in that Priesthood;—and when Faith is quickened by the voice of God in the Messenger, it will come into its *own Priesthood*, and grow strong, to be called *under* the justice of the Father; then it has *passed* the angel of Reason, and must *also go through* the Justice of the *Father* to the Mercy of the SON: for as Faith fell it must go back by *regeneration*, which cannot be done in sleep, or by dream, but will be truly sensible of its passage:—for the letter only will not translate any one into HEAVEN, because men must be approved of by CHRIST:—thus the Priesthood of Faith leads to life, and the priesthood of Reason leads to death.

C H A P. XIII.

THOSE wise and foolish virgins, tend similar to the *rich Man and Beggar* (Luke xvi.) this *rich Man* is the Literalist, who has took the Letter into the priesthood of Reason, and there can press into the *kingdom of God* according to his *imagination*; and also seek the *kingdom of Reason* for *Riches*, and so *fare sumptuously every day*, both natural and spiritual:—But he that work the *works of Faith* is full of Sores, seeking to get to CHRIST to be *bealed*, internal unto salvation:—Also when Faith is quickened to the knowledge of JESUS and his Promise, then, when *in Act*, it will *pray* for his divine assistance, why?

why? because it is *sore afflicted*, and them who profess the same letter will hold him at scorn, if they cannot *tempt* him into the wild priesthood of Reason, to do as they:—IF there is no Messenger living, and Faith is secretly influenced by the holy spirit of God, so as to know something of its *sore condition* (but no man on earth to guide him) he will be apt to go to them who profess the same letter, thinking to find some relief; but behold they be all *Rich* in the letter, having got it into the wild priesthood of Reason, and feed upon it by the spirit of Reason, and make to themselves the promise of Jesus, so are sure of salvation without further trouble:—*Then*, Faith cannot find *one crumb fall from this table* of Reason to feed upon, and if he tell his condition, they will say he doth not believe as they do, and has not true Faith, if he had he would have the *Assurance* and peace like them, which further wounds the soul, and tempt him to be like them:—but if he tell strangers of his condition, they will pity him, and if able will help him, and in this manner are *external sores* pitied:—Thus Elect man must be a *Beggar*, not only to pass through this life, but also for the *Kingdom of Heaven*. (ver. 22.) “And it came to pass that the “beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham’s bosom.” Now *Abraham’s bosom* is the second paradise to Faith or bed of Mercy; for God communed with *Abraham* in the royal priesthood of Faith, the same as he did with the Elect of old; only *Abraham* is mentioned because of the promise, and to shew forth the difference between the literal and spiritual *Jew*, and those wise and foolish virgins do between the literal and spiritual *Christian*, but all terminate in one head. NOW in Regeneration there is *three Steps* to the *Seal of Christ*, which is in HEAVEN, *i. e.* Faith is quickened and taken into the royal priesthood, and work the works of Faith; then by divine assistance it grows strong, and power is given to prophecy of its own salvation; after this it is called up before the justice of the *Father*, and from

from thence given birth to the *Mercy of the Son*; (as Mark iv.) Jesus likens the kingdom of God, "For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself, *first* the Blade, *then* the Ear, *after* that the full Corn in the Ear."—Now, in this Priesthood or road for heaven, *Angels ascend and descend*, i. e. Faith's prayer *ascends* to God for his divine assistance, and the influence of this holy spirit *descends* from heaven, to assist Faith in its journey;—this is *Angels of Faith*! or, *the Angels of God*! thus is *the beggar carried by angels into Abraham's bosom*; for Abraham is translated to under the mercy of the SON, which is the second and great paradise to Faith, as Faith never will fall from this paradise, for the next state is glory.

"The rich man also died and was buried," i. e. when death seizes the literalist who is *rich* in his own wisdom; or he that has given himself up to Reason's liberty, to seek after *riches*, that he may enjoy the good things of this world, or do as he like, yet profess the *Scripture*, but instead of being obedient to it, they will turn and construct the scripture, so as to be obedient to their *Acts*, and as so justify or rather forgive themselves: then as aforesaid, when *Death* comes, the soul is called by the *internal angel* who is as *Moses*, and there bound under the seal of justice; then *he is dead and buried* from all his former glory, for he cannot *go back* to it, neither can he *pass* the Angel in justice, to the *Mercy of Christ*.

Ver. 23. "And in hell he lifted up his eyes being in torment, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom." Now in this *hell or torment* of soul he could *see* he had gathered by the spirit of Reason concerning the scripture, all in the wrong; for instead of being in the *royal Priesthood* to work the works of Faith, he took the Letter, Call, or invitation, into the *wild priesthood* of Reason, and sought that Kingdom, and justified himself in, and by, that priesthood, which

was *then* all ended with *him*, and the promise in the letter of no use to him.

Ver. 24. "And he cried and said, father Abraham, "have mercy on me." Now, the literal Jews thought much of themselves because they were *Abraham's seed by Generation*, and because of that, said "they never "was in bondage to any man." But according to *Faith and Regeneration* they were not *Abraham's Children*; therefore Jesus said, "If ye were Abraham's children, "ye would do the *Works* of Abraham," (John viii. 39.) *i. e.* the *Works* of Faith in the *royal Priesthood* for regeneration, and then they could be born or translated, to under the mercy of the SON, as *Abraham* was:—No *v*, *Abraham* who was *afar off*, and *Lazarus* in his *bosom*, was *cried unto for mercy* by the literal *Jews* who claimed him as their *Father*, and thought themselves safe in, and through him; and his being *afar off*, is this, *Abraham*, by the power of Faith, gathered his way in the royal priesthood to be translated to under the mercy of the SON, and died in the *bed of mercy*, *i. e.* under the *Seal* of the living God, for the kingdom of mercy and glory, and in this very condition the Elect dies in, which is *Abraham's bosom*, or second paradise to Faith: But as aforesaid, the seed of Reason took the word or letter, into the priesthood of Reason, and did as they pleased with it, and so *fared sumptuously every day* in the waters of Reason: but when death comes, then the soul is bound by the internal angel in justice, and those waters are dried up, and the soul sealed for the *second death*; which is *afar off from the bosom* of *Abraham*, who is sealed for Life ETERNAL: Then *the rich man desired Lazarus to be sent to him*, *i. e.* he would fain partake of the fruits brought forth by the Elect in the royal Priesthood, to *cool his tongue*, which was burnt up from the true prayer of Faith, and hope of salvation, but his answer was, he had his liberty in the priesthood of Reason to gather *the good things of this life*, and went his *Way* to the seal of the angel in justice; which *Lazarus* had

had not, *but received evil things* from Reason, when he gathered his *Way* in the royal priesthood of Faith; to the seal of the *Angel* of Faith and Mercy:—And this *great Gulf which is fixed between them*, is the two priest-hoods, *i. e.* the priesthood of Faith, and that of Reason, as one leads to life, and the other to death; for when Reason is taken to under the seal of his *Angel*, his heaven is ended; and when Faith is taken to under the seal of his *Angel* his hell is ended; as then Reason can no more tempt and persecute that soul, for Faith dies under his *Seal*, and Reason dies under his *Seal*, therefore cannot pass from one to the other, because *the gulf* is then become so mighty and so *great*.

Moreover, when *the rich man* could not get from the seal of justice, he would have sent to his brethren: as, (ver. 27.) then he said, “I pray thee therefore father, “that thou would send him to my father’s house.” Here you may see, he then understood the Name, *Father-Abraham*, unto the *literal Jew* was but titular, for now he calls him *Father*, and prays he would send *Lazarus*, saying, “to my *Father’s house*, for I have five “brethren, that he may testify unto them, lest they “also come into this place of torment.” Now his *Father’s house*, is the house or *Lineage* of Reason, wherein dwelleth the *Law* of Moses, and the *true* Priesthood of Reason, because given to them by Moses; but the *Wild* or *Libertine* priesthood, that is produced by Reason; therefore his answer was, “They have Moses and the “prophets, let them hear them, if not, they will not “be-persuaded, though one rose from the dead.” For *Moses* is the Prophet to the seed of Reason, and *JESUS* is the prophet that *WAS to Come*, and *IS to Come* to the seed of Faith: ALSO when any one is spiritually born, or translated to the mercy of the SON, and his natural life given him, to be sent back to tell the Elect his brethren, he is never sent into the priesthood of Reason, but into the priesthood of Faith; and if Reason was loosed by his angel, so as to come back, he would go into

into his own waters, *i. e.* as old Cain did, when *he* was loosed by the *Angel*, and *went into the land of Nod*, and there produced a wild priesthood to himself, which has continued to this day.

I would have the Elect, now told of the *Priesthood of Faith*, to seek that, and be mindful of temptation, not to be tempted into the priesthood of Reason, and there lulled asleep, in the follies of this life : For there is *many* that profess Jesus and expect to be saved by him, and will talk of great things, yet are born into this world to go no higher than the priesthood of Reason, and aim to inherit the good things of this world : now this is the greatest thing to them, because they were born to inherit no other ; and they will tempt the Elect to come into this sottish mire with them : BUT Faith is to *seek the kingdom of Heaven*, as (Matt. vi.) Jesus taught, to *avoid worldly care*, in what they should *eat or drink, or be clothed, or thought for the morrow* ; “ But seek ye first “ the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all “ those things shall be added unto you.” Now, in *those* (worldly) *things*, Reason is very fond of possession, and to reign himself in it ; the same as he is, in making choice of his own salvation by the letter, that he has taken into the wild priesthood of Reason, and so become an enemy to Christ’s kingdom of regenerated Faith, for they cannot bear the priesthood of Faith, that Christ should *reign over them* ; therefore (Luke xix.) Jesus said, “ but those mine enemies, which would not that “ I should *reign* over them, bring them hither, and slay “ them before me,” *i. e.* they will be called and *slain* by the internal angel in justice, under the feet of mercy ; therefore every man is sure to be called upon by JESUS to be *sealed* for life eternal ; or by the *Angel, as Moses*, who has already sealed him for death ; and no one knows when the *Call* will come :—then, *Blessed* are the Elect, that are prepared for the *Call of Jesus* ! but the *literal Christian* may call on Jesus, as his *Saviour*, but he will find no more benefit than the *literal Jew* did, in calling on Abraham as his *Father*.

CHAP.

C H A P. XIV.

JESUS speaks another parable (Matt. xxii.) saying, "The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his Son." This *certain king* WAS and IS the *King of heaven*; for as I said, the LORD GOD of HEAVEN, and of Faith, created heaven and earth, and all things therein; but the greatest of all his creation was his *own children* Adam and Eve; why? because they were created with a life or soul of Faith, which is the divine nature of God, and as so his own children; and Faith being joined to an earthen vessel, and of this earth by creation, which, made pure human nature;—thus, appeared *Adam and Eve*, beautiful and perfect by creation, in human nature animated with divine Faith; now this is the true creation of *Faith*; which was created under a Law distinct to *itself*, and that is, *You shall not hearken to the voice of Reason*, for when you do, you will surely be brought under *captivity* and *Death*: Therefore Adam and Eve, whose life was of Faith, was suffered to be tempted by the *serpent angel*, who *hearkened* to him, and by him was tempted, not only to *fall* under the *justice of the Father* which is death, but also into the *Priesthood of Reason*, because they took Reason into themselves; for his temptation was as such, *for them to become as gods* (like unto himself) *to know both good and evil*; for as they fell under the power of Reason, they were subject to that *law and priesthood*. and also the *Angel* of that *law*; hence knew both *good and evil*, and the law and priesthood of Reason: Neither can Faith, or the Elect, be tempted any lower than into the priesthood of Reason; and him or them that tempts Faith or the Elect, into the *priesthood of Reason*, is as, and acts as, the *serpent angel* did in the beginning.

Yea, *God the creator* and *Father to Faith*, became the *God of justice* through the acts of his own children,
why?

why? because they broke the *Law of Faith* they were created under, and fell under the power of death: Further, when God created *Man* and *Angel*, it became of an *infinite* consequence; as thus, the seraphic host, ever to stand in their created purity, by the preserving power of the Lord God their creator: Also to suffer the *Che- rubim* to break his own law, and fall for, and into *gene- ration*; and after that suffer him to *tempt Faith* to break its law:—Now those laws being broke, is of an *infinite* consequence; that when the seed of Reason, which is the cherubical nature, live to manhood, and the *internal Angel* took place in the soul, they are charged with the law, then must go their way under *infinite* Justice according to the *Law*:—And for Faith breaking its *Law*, was a consequence of its *losing its life*, and for ever to lay in *silent death*, disunited from its creator and *Father*, then it remained a work for the DIVINE MAJESTY to recover his *own children* from *death* to life, again to himself, without acting against the glory of his creation, or the *Law of Faith* he created them under; therefore this could not be done but by *Regeneration*, which is working *Life* back again out of *Death*; and not only so, but also to *pay the grand debt* to the *Law of Faith*, and the *infinite justice of the Father*, which took place when that *Law* was broke:—And this could not be done, but by the very *eternal God*, that created, and gave a *Law* to Faith, that when it was broke, there followed an infinite effect or consequence, according to the power and glory of God's creation;—therefore; *The very eternal God, or seed-spring of Faith that created, with his creating power transmuted himself into his own created nature of Adam, which was human animated with Faith* (that was fell under the justice of the Father, by breaking the *law of Faith*) and this was all he *took on himself, i. e.* his own created *Nature of Faith*, and the *Law of Faith*, to go through the *justice of the Father*, relative to Faith;—for he *took* nothing of Reason on him, neither its Law, nor Nature.

Thus,

Thus, the great *king of heaven*, or God the *Father* to the Elect, transmuted himself into flesh, and took *the fallen nature of Faith*; then he was become a true *Son* to the great *power of the Father*! and although he had on himself the *fallen nature of Faith*, yet he went through the power of Reason in LAMB-LIKE innocence, and never hearkened to it, and in this he kept the *Law of Faith*! Yea further than this, *He* having the *fallen nature of Faith*,—and because of that, he was compelled to go through the *justice of the Father* which is death: Therefore when the *Law of Faith* was broke, and the *justice of the Father* took place, it was of an *infinite* consequence, and an *infinite* Effect must be worked to keep that *Law*! and satisfy that *Justice*!—Then for this cause, God the creator was graciously pleased to become man and keep this law, and in obedience to that justice, gave his Godhead life up to death;—THUS, the *justice of the Father* was of that consequence, as not to be satisfied; without taking the very *Eternal God* who created, into death; therefore the very God both in person and spirit, that created Faith under a *Law*, (which was broke by man from whence the justice of the *Father* took place) was taken into *Death* to satisfy that *justice*, it being of an *infinite force*! and that *justice was satisfied*! why? because it took the *Almighty God*, with his creating power, under it, in death! (which was the cause of its *being*, through his creation) and no other way than this, could that *Law and justice* be satisfied, and the creation not acted against, but to remain pure, according to its decreed order, and shine forth in its glorious purity.

Thus is the Elect world redeemed, by the very GOD becoming *Man*, and giving his *Godhead life* up to *death* in his own *justice*, and quickened out of that *death* into a new and glorious life of *Mercy*!—thus *God the Father* become *God the Son*, or the *God of justice* went through his own justice to become the *God of infinite Mercy* to his Elect; and in this manner was the Elect world re-

deemed, and *Life* worked out of *Death* by regeneration, for the kingdom of heaven : For I would have the Elect *understand*, that after the *Fall*, Faith was not only *dead* in the sight of God, but also *dead* in itself from the *Communion* with God, and was in itself *Lost*, till God was graciously pleased to *Call to Adam* and promise he himself would become a *Son* to his own *Power*, and redeem them ; then Faith was quickened from death to *Life*, or born from its womb or seed, into *Act*, and to the promise of Christ, and be brought on in regeneration to the mercy of the *Son*.

Again, Adam, in his *spiritual travail* in the *Regeneration*, found to his *sorrow* the great incumbrance of Reason, and its law and priesthood (that he fell into through temptation) to *know good and evil* in the priesthood of Reason ; for Reason in his own priesthood is *as a god*, for he does as he please, and will give judgment against man : Therefore, when this *virgin Daughter* was born, which is life quickened out of death for regeneration, Adam found his soul incumbered with spiritual *briars, thorns, thistles, &c.* that was and is produced by this dark *earthly* spirit of Reason :—FOR as Faith fell so low, as to be wholly under the power of death, and disunited from the spiritual *Communion* with God ; it must be quickened from that death to life, to *commune* with God, for that must be done with this quickened spirit ; and this is the royal priesthood of Faith, wherein is found the *Promise of CHRIST*, and the *prophecy* of your own *Salvation* ; therefore Adam by the prayer of Faith, in the mystical union, or spiritual communion received the divine incomes of the holy spirit from God, which helped him through this sore journey, and to prophecy of Christ, which was of his own salvation ; and at death was called up to under the justice of the *Father*, and from thence translated to under the mercy of the *SON*, and then was united to the *God of Mercy, i. e.* Christ ; and died in the bed of mercy, to be raised unto the *glorious kingdom* of *CHRIST* ; and in this he put forth

forth his hand, and took of the *tree of Life*, and eat to *live for ever* : This IS the *royal priesthood* of Faith, *i. e.* the *priesthood of Christ*, in which he gathers his united kingdom of Faith to his *glorious Mercy* ; for I would men *understood* this,—as Faith fell under the power of death, and the justice of the Father, it needs must have a *priesthood* to offer its prayer, which is the golden and acceptable incense that ascends to *heaven* for the glorious mercy of the SON : And also Reason has a priesthood, but the true priesthood of Reason was given forth by *Moses*, and that priesthood was to stay God's justice, that Reason should enjoy his kingdom here, in peace ; but Reason was more fond of his own *wild* priesthood, than its *given* Priesthood ; which was the cause of the great troubles brought upon Israel in the time of the *Law* : therefore as Faith and Reason each broke their own *Law*, they require each their own priesthood ; but the priesthood of Faith is of *Mercy*, and leadeth to *mercy* ; and that of Reason is of *Justice*, and is bound under the *justice* of the *internal angel*.

And thus were the Elect of old, in *secret*, taught by the holy spirit ; but they must be quickened from death to life by the power of God as Adam was ; for this is to be *understood*—when children are born into this world, they are born to, or under the *Law* and priesthood of Reason ; for when they come to manhood the *internal Angel* in justice takes place in the soul, and are charged with breaking the *Law*, then the *priesthood* took place to excuse Reason for a time : Also Reason in man may be inspired without any *new Birth*, only a little agitation of soul, and they will talk of great things, yet die as they were born into this world, relative to the true knowledge or works of Faith :—But it is not so with Faith ; for as I said,—as *Faith* was quickened out of death into a new life, or born from its womb or seed in the man *Adam*, to the promise of Christ, and royal priesthood of Faith, so it must in all his children the Elect ; for one man to hear of, or read of another man's

promise, or prophecy, that is all dead to him, until Faith is quickened from death to life, to the royal priesthood, works of Faith, and promise of Christ, as it was in him or them, who before prophesied; for every one must work the works of Faith, for to stand before the justice of the Father, distinct to, and for himself.

In this *royal priesthood* WAS and IS the *Kingdom of Christ* gathered; for in days of old, Faith in Elect men was quickened from death to life, and in *secret* taught, and guided by the holy spirit of God: and in mystical *union*, and holy *communion* the prayer of Faith ascended, and divine assistance descended, to help the soul through this sore journey, and to prophecy of his own salvation! then at the hour of death they were united or translated to under the mercy of the SON; and in this, took of the *tree of life*, and *eat to live for ever*; thus, from the man *Adam*, till the coming of *Christ*: For in the royal Elect, Faith being quickened from death to life, and taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, and offered the true prayer of Faith, which is the sweet saving incense that ascends to God, and God was graciously pleased to assist them to *prophecy* of their own salvation; *i. e.* God the Father who was the God of justice, would become God the Son, and the God of mercy, and redeem them; and in this royal priesthood of Faith, they were united to God for Christ in spirit, and were a WITNESS, OLIVE-TREE, or CANDLESTICK, in whom the candle of Faith burned, that *stood and prophesied in sackcloth before God*; *i. e.* they, against all the powers of Reason, and in sorrow of soul, which is *Sackcloth*, did work the works of Faith, and *prophecy* of salvation *before God*:—this is one of the *Witnesses of his spirit, Olive-tree, or Candlestick*, and was that *who stood before him*, when he was in the condition of God the Father, or of justice;—BUT in the days of *old*, and in the time of the *Law*, this holy communion between *God*, and the spiritual *virgin Daughter* of Faith, quickened in the souls of his Elect, was in secret,
and

and intirely distinct to the cherubical inspiration, and priesthood that was given to Reason; for the *Law* of Reason rules the *Life* of Reason, and justice rules that *Law*; and the *priesthood* is but the *incense* of Reason, to *stay* God's justice for a time; therefore no witness to the *spirit of Faith*, which is the divine nature of God, nor the *new Life* out of death, nor his *royal priesthood*, nor his mighty *works of Redemption*, nor his holy *Seal* of salvation; for as I said, when Elect men are born, they are born to the law and priesthood of Reason;—then Faith must be quickened from death to life, to come into its own *priesthood* to the spiritual knowledge of Christ.

Yea, GOD who became the God of *Justice* through the acts of man and angel, became a Son to his own power, to become the God of *Mercy* to his Elect: For as Faith fell under the justice of the Father, nothing but the godhead *Life* going into *death*, or being taken into death under that justice, could satisfy that justice, why? because it became of an *infinite* consequence both to God and the Elect, when it took place: Therefore Jesus came in, or upon the prophecies of his Elect, who prophesied in the royal priesthood of Faith, of his coming to redeem them: And in Jesus *was*, and *is*, the essential spirit and power of Faith, by which he created, and worked the mighty works of Redemption: ALSO Jesus coming in, or upon the *prophecies* of his Elect, he came in his *royal priesthood*; now, *understand* this,—all the Elect are born into this world, to the law and priesthood of Reason, but JESUS *was born into this world* to the *Law of Faith* and that *royal priesthood*! which, is the cause that Faith must be *quickened* from death to life, or *born* from its womb or seed, to the grand Union, and lively mystery of Faith, and Christ; for Jesus came forth in his own royal *Priesthood*, and he declared his holy gospel, covenant of grace, works of Faith, and salvation for his Elect, *in his own royal and merciful priesthood* which he uttered;—and re-
deemed

deemed the Elect world. NOW this is the "*marriage feast*" that a certain king made for his son," because God himself become a *Son*, to be the God of mercy to his Elect ; and when Faith is quickened from death to life, and taken into the royal priesthood to work the works of Faith, and in the spiritual communion with Christ, who is the God of heaven, become a *Son* for salvation, IS in the sonship of God, by which means the spirit of Faith in man becomes the essential Life in *Regeneration*, and is united to CHRIST to receive the divine incomes of his heavenly grace and mercy, which is the *Marriage feast* ! or taking of the tree of life to eat and live for ever !

C H A P. XV.

YEA, Jesus uttered his holy gospel, and worked those mighty works of Redemption, and united himself to his Elect through his divine mercy (for JESUS is the *Elder Brother* of the Elect in his holy gospel, who has served and doth serve *the younger*) also HE is the *first* who quickens Faith, for to bring it on in regeneration ; and the *last* that is to sanctify and seal it for the resurrection to his glorious kingdom ; therefore all quickening power to Faith for regeneration, which leadeth to salvation, is in, and of the Sonship of God, why ? because he made all things new to himself, for his own glory ; and also has and will make all things new to, and *in* the souls of Elect man for their salvation ; and when man has worked the works of Faith in the royal priesthood, to be called upon under the justice of the Father, then—Christ takes the man into his mercy, through HIS mighty works of redemption, FOR *understand* this, when Faith is quickened in Elect man, and he has worked the works of Faith aforesaid, according

according to his portion ; then upon this (man's works of Faith, and prophecy) Christ comes and finishes the mighty works of Faith for the salvation of such a man !

Further, as JESUS came in, or on, the *Prophecies* of the Elect of old, which was a *Witness* of, or to, his holy spirit (when he was in the condition of God the Father, or of justice) HE uttered *his* holy gospel, holy covenant of grace, and the works of Faith in *his* royal priesthood ; then the Elect was, and would be invited, into the *royal priesthood*, and *they* will come and work the works of Faith, for to stand before him in spirit, and *will that HE should rule over them, and drink of the cup that he himself did drink of* ; and by the divine incomes from heaven, *prophecy* of their own salvation, *i. e.* as Christ has come to redeem, he also will come in spirit, and unite himself to this *Virgin daughter* of Faith, in spiritual and holy *Marriage*, and give them *spiritual Birth* to his holy and spiritual covenant of grace, and seal this spiritual born *Son of Faith* for the kingdom of glory.

This, IS the *Church of Christ*, and the WITNESS of *his* holy spirit that stand before him and prophecy, as he is now in the condition of God the SON :—For as the Elect of old, and in the time of the Law, when *Faith* was quickened from death to life, and taken into the royal priesthood, *It stood and prophecied before God*, when He was in the condition of the FATHER, and is the *Olive-tree, golden Candlestick, or Witness* of his spirit (for “ the testimony of Jesus, is the spirit of prophecy ”) and at the hour of death were in spirit united to God for Christ, or *translated* to under the mercy of the Son ; and as so, stand recorded in the *Book of Life* ; and *have the name of the Father written in their foreheads*, so when CHRIST had worked the works of redemption, he ascended the high HEAVEN of MERCY, and took possession of this his kingdom of regenerated Faith, or *Olive-tree, Witness of His spirit, or Candlestick* in whom the royal incense of Faith burned :—And the

the other *Olive-tree*, *golden Candlestick*, or *Witness of his spirit*, are the Elect when Faith is *quickened*, and taken into the royal *priesthood*, and *stand before him* and *prophecy*, now HE is in the condition of a SON, and are gathered and united to him by the power of *Regeneration*, and as so, *stand recorded* in the *BOOK OF LIFE*: Therefore as JESUS has worked the works of redemption, and ascended into the high heaven of *mercy*, HE has *made the marriage feast to the Son*; “and his “servants was sent to call them that were bidden, and “they would not come,” *i. e.* when men profess any prophetic letter, or letter of the gospel, and thereby say or expect Christ to come to save them, which is the *bidden notice*,—then when Christ *came* in person, or doth come in spirit, and the *marriage door is opened*, they *would not*, nor *will enter in*; because Christ doth not come, according to their expectation and liking.

Again, (Matt. xxii.) HE *sent forth other servants*, saying, “Tell them which are bidden, behold, I have “prepared my dinner, my oxen and fatlings are killed, “and all things are ready, come unto the marriage;” *i. e.* Christ has worked the works of Redemption, so in that, *made ready* for the *marriage feast*; and when any man or men are sent forth by Jesus, inspired with his holy spirit, they come in the covenant of *Grace*, and the *marriage door is opened*, and *all things ready*, then they *invite men to come* into the *priesthood of Faith*, and work the works, that they may go up, and enter into the spiritual and holy *marriage with Jesus*, to have his royal SEAL for the resurrection to eternal life:—“But “they made light of it, and went their *Way*, one to “his farm, and another to his merchandize.” Now when this *Call* comes, it tells them, they must leave all their efforts of Reason, *i. e.* the whole world behind, for the holy marriage and kingdom of heaven, which is hard to the spirit of Reason; For Reason has gathered from the letter according to his own wisdom, which is contrary to the *wisdom* of Faith, which is the *wisdom* of
of

of Christ: Then they cannot *understand* it, and so *make light of it, and go their Way, one to his farm, and another to his merchandize; i. e.* one has his *House* to mind, another his *Land*, another his *Trade*, another his *Wife*, another his *peaceable Living*, another his *Children*, another the manners, follies, and fashions of the *World*, and another his *honour* among men: For as the seed of Reason is born into this world, for the wisdom and *vain pleasures* thereof; therefore if they gain them, which is their *desired World*, that is their *Heaven*; for although they *read and profess* the letter of Jesus, yet their *Will* is to *seek* the world, and then let the *kingdom of God be added*, which is contrary to the command of Christ; (Matt. vi.) "But seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all *those things* shall be added unto you," *i. e.* *necessaries* for this life; but it is a hard thing for Reason to trust God even in this: Also, I would have the Elect, that have obeyed this *Call*, and *waiting* for the holy Marriage, to mind the *temptation*, for Reason will *tempt* you if possible from the Messenger after those vain alluring things; for it is no easy thing to be *in*, and keep *in*, the Priesthood of Faith; indeed the spirit of Faith is *willing*, and will pray, but when that is inactive, the soul of man is *weak* unto temptation: Further, there is some of the seed of Reason will conceive anger against the Messenger, and in a godlike manner judge, and condemn him (who *calls* to the holy marriage) for blasphemy; so the Messenger is slighted, and condemned, which is spiritual *Murder*; and they will dwell on a *dead Letter*, that they may construct to their liking, to justify themselves in evil doing.

Again, When the Messenger doth invite, and has invited men, to come into this holy Marriage, and they *will not come*, then it causes a mourning in the soul of the Messenger, because he comes in the covenant of Grace and Mercy, where there is *no joy in the death of a sinner*;—also the Messenger being in spiritual communion with God, which is the *priesthood of Faith*,

Q

therefore

therefore this spiritual *Mourning* with the cruelties of Reason ascends to heaven, and centers to him or them, who sit in the justice of the Father, as well, as it is recorded by the internal angel in justice in the soul of man, who has power given him over the spirit of Reason; for as the Messenger came out from *Heaven*, the *Acts* of the Messenger ascend to *Heaven*, and is also recorded in the soul of man, which, tend to the mercy or justice to man.

Ver. 7. "But when the king heard thereof he was wroth, and sent his armies forth, and destroyed those *"murderers, and burnt up their city," i. e.* them who will not come to the holy marriage feast, *i. e.* to the divine mercy of Jesus, are left behind *desolate* under the seal of justice (which is *wrath to come*) in all their self-cunning, slights, and evil utterance, full of wrath against the Messenger, that if possible they could they would exterpate the *spirit*; and they being sealed under their own evils, they take them wherever they go:—For the *internal Angel* who seals every man under his own evil, has a spiritual union with *him, or them*, who sit in justice in heaven above, so that every one will be his own witness to his own condemnation; thus all their care and wisdom to enrich themselves and families, *i. e.* *building cities* to enroll their *names*, will come to nought; and all their gathered knowledge by their own dark spirit, is but conceited wisdom, from the letter of the gospel, become their spiritual refuge or *City* wherein dwells their spiritual hope, which will be *burnt up by this king's armies*, *i. e.* every man has this internal *Angel in justice* in himself, witness to the acts of man, and is the seal to his conscience, bearing true record before the attribute of justice, so that every one will be his own witness to his own condemnation:—THIS is the great army, or armies, that the king has sent forth; for when death comes, some are called and taken by this *Angel*, whose *book is opened*, then they would fain go back to their former pleasures, but they cannot, then
their

their city is burned up, and all their hopes of salvation is *burnt up*, i. e. their spiritual city ; for under the seal of this *Angel* they must die : Also there is others that may enter into death more composed, i. e. because the angel has stayed justice in the soul ; and *the book will be opened* in the resurrection, for if they cannot come into the holy marriage with Jesus, they must die under the seal of the internal angel in justice : Further, if wickedness and cruelties extend too far, justice may overtake and overthrow a man, even to misery in this life, for the *Angel* being in *act*, and them who sit in justice commune in secret with the *Angel*, then if from heaven he is suffered he will do his work, and overthrow man in his evil.

Ver. 8. “ Then saith he unto his servants, the wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not “ worthy.” Now under the gospel there has been invitations come from God, for them who come in the royal priesthood of Faith,—not only *invites*, but also *prophecies* ; and them who came and worked the works of Faith in the *days* of a Messenger, *entered* into the *holy Marriage*.; but after the decease of the Messenger, and of them who worked in his *Day*, then others who professed (but could not, nor would not come into the priesthood of Faith) took full possession of the letter, and invited others to come, and went their *Way* with the letter into the *Wild priesthood* of Reason, and there flourish like green *leaves* on the *sycamore-tree*, and make to themselves the *promise*, according to the dark spirit of Reason, and as so they have too great opinion of themselves (like unto the Jews in the days of Christ) because that *Light* in them is *darkness* : For if man come into the priesthood of Faith JESUS is his prophet, but if man do remain in the priesthood of Reason, then Moses is his prophet, let him profess who he will, or say what he will ; therefore when a Messenger comes to call to the holy marriage with JESUS, them that will not come, are found *unworthy*, and left *desolate* on the bare

letter, and will go their way under justice, where they will find Moses.

Ver. 9. "Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage;" *i. e.* when the Messenger has *invited* them, where he is sent, that only, is not the extent of his *Call*, because the Elect are *bid in many churches and places*; and it is the will of God they should come into HIS priesthood, and HE *to rule over them*; then that is the TRUE CHURCH of CHRIST, because this message is to the Elect, be where they will, and they will be gathered in according to this message, it being of God:—Also there is *many*, by their conceited wisdom on the letter, are become *teachers and spiritual guides*, &c. to the people; and are become so self conceited in it, as to abide by it, for to have salvation, and would gather the whole world to their *wisdom* if they could;—but the Elect who are but *fools* in the eyes of those men, will come in before them and be *bealed*, so that *the marriage will be furnished with guests*; for JESUS said, "bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind," and those *will come in*, to be internally *bealed* of those spiritual *infirmities*, while those of conceited wisdom will be kept out:—Further, I would have the Elect *understand*, that all who profess the Letter of JESUS as said to be *bidden to the marriage*, but none will come but the royal Elect:—Also in the days of a Messenger; if any come and take the word, and do not work the works of Faith, he will go into the priesthood of Reason, and not be chosen to go unto the marriage, so he is *cast out*, and must die under the justice of the *Angel*, and this is him or them, *who has not the wedding garment*, for the *fruits of Faith* is the *wedding garment*, and they only are chosen, as ver. 14, "for many are called, but few are chosen."

Again, of the *priesthood of Reason*; there is the *given priesthood* that was given forth by Moses, when he gave forth the law, and officiated by Aaron, he being the *high Priest*

Priest in that *priesthood*, which was, and is to *stay* God's justice for a time : Also there is a *Priesthood* that the spirit of Reason is productive of, to excuse itself, *i. e.* the *Wild* *priesthood* of Reason ; and the Jews in the time of the *Law* was too apt to slide back to this *priesthood*, they being more fond of that, then they were of the given *priesthood*, for which cause great troubles were brought on that kingdom, Israel.—YEA this *Wild Priesthood* produced by Reason, was first found in *Cain* ; from whence it took place, for Reason to fly to, for when *Cain* was loosed by the *Cberubim* and *flaming sword*, or internal Angel in justice, whom he called *Lord*, he *went into the land of Nod*, *i. e.* the *State* of forgetfulness so far as this,—when justice is *stayed* in the soul for a time, the spirit of Reason *forms* to himself his *own* forgiveness, or that he will be forgiven of God, from whence springs the *hope* of Reason, under the justice of the angel, and this *hope* is the waters that Reason live in, which I call the great *river Euphrates in the land of Nod*, that runs in the soul of man to this day : For on this *river* depends the rivers and fountains of water, from whence flow the delights to Reason : And when justice was *stayed* in *Cain*, and this *hope* took place *he formed* to himself his own forgiveness, and what would please God by his *Acts, Offerings, &c.* which is the *Wild priesthood* of Reason, and as so become an *experimental preacher* and *teacher*, by, or from what he had gone through, before he was loosed by the angel (in his own family when born to him, by *Lamech*, the fifth from *Cain*, Gen. iv.) when he called his two wives, saying, “ I have slain a man to my wounding, and a “ young man to my hurt ;” also said, “ If *Cain* shall be “ avenged seven fold, truely *Lamech* seventy and seven “ fold.” Here it is plain *Cain* taught his own children, and that himself should be *avenged seven fold*, *i. e.* in effect to say, *His* punishment should be in this life.

Further, (Gen. ii.) “ And a river went out of Eden “ to water the garden, and from thence it was parted and “ became

"became into four heads." This great *river* is the *waters* of Reason, and *came out* by permission from the *tree of knowledge of good and evil*, which is Reason with its law written in it, and go forth to delight Reason, which is a *garden* to that spirit; and to do this *it parted, and become into four heads*: Now the first three *heads* are to be understood by expression according to the rise and fluctuation of the world; for those *waters* is the desire of Reason to shine in his kingdom, therefore terminate the same, though not always expressed alike: But now in general it runs thus,—as *first*, the spirit of Reason desire to get Gold, &c. to become rich.—*Secondly*, then it thirsts after lands, mansions, delicious fare, grand appearance, *Rule* over Souls, honour, &c. *Thirdly*, after Arts and Emulations; that the *two* first must come to the *third*, to have their desires compleated. And the *fourth* is Euphrates, *i. e.* the spiritual hope to Reason for salvation (as aforesaid) and if this *river* stop the others are no more. Also in the time of *Lamech*, this river began to divide in his sons; as thus, "*Jabal*" the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have "Cattle: *Jubal*, the father of such as handle the Harp" and Organ: *Tubal-Cain*, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron;" thus Reason divided into branches to raise his kingdom, and formed a *worship* and *Priesthood* to excuse itself, which went on with increase, and continue to this day.

Reason being so fond of this *Priesthood*, and *delight in those Waters*, that in the time of the *Law*, when the *given Priesthood* was in act, the Jews would slide back to the *wild priesthood*, which was called whoredoms and abominations in, and among them, for all *they* owned and followed Moses. Also under the gospel, if a Messenger comes from JESUS, in his holy covenant of mercy to call to the holy marriage with Jesus, he is sure to find men in the *strong-hold* of the wild priesthood and waters of Reason, let them profess what letter they will; therefore Jesus speak his parable of the great supper,

supper, which is the same in consequence as the *marriage with the Son*, and he sent his servant at *supper time* to call them that were bidden, saying, "ALL THINGS ARE NOW READY," (Luke xiv.) *and they all with one consent began to make excuses; the first said unto him*, "I have bought a piece of ground, and I needs must go and see it, I pray thee have me excused;" *another said* I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them, I pray thee have me excused; and *another said*, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come;" thus you may see the *three heads* of the *waters* of Reason, wherein that soul and spirit is watered with delights, to rise, support, and shine in his kingdom, but all in his own way, and in the great *Euphrates* in this spiritual land of *Nod*, i. e. the *waters of hope* to Reason, where he will find excuse from his own spirit, which is his priest, if not, there is plenty of external priests in this great river that will find excuses for him or them; for Reason likes to be king in himself and do as he please in his own priesthood, and to make choice of his own *Way* to heaven, which is acting as a God: therefore BLESSED are they that can come out of this *priesthood* and waters (when the *Call* comes) into the priesthood and waters of Faith, for Christ to rule over them; for when Jesus was or is graciously pleased to send a Messenger to call to the holy marriage, there is those found that will refuse the kingdom of heaven for the kingdom and priesthood of Reason; And also them who will leave the glory of Reason, for the priesthood of Faith and kingdom of heaven; which must be done, let the suffering be as it will in this life; as Jesus said, "and whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, he cannot be my disciple."

Further, concerning the *priesthood of Faith* and the holy *Marriage* with Jesus, who is the LAMB OF GOD, for all *Rule* and power over Faith is in him, and the fruits of Faith centers to him, who has worked redemption for his Elect, and become the God of mercy

to

to them, because he has waded through the power of Reason, which is temptation to evil, and through the power of death and hell, and the justice of the Father; for the all-powerful works and righteousness of Faith in CHRIST, is the glorious *Incense* that ascended, and *ascends with the prayer of the saints*, which is for their salvation: Thus CHRIST is the golden altar, *i. e.* the GRAND ALTAR OF FAITH, that has the *four horns*, which are four powers, *i. e.* power over the *Justice* of the Father (which is justice to Faith) and power over *Sin*, and over *Death*, and *Hell*: And all the prayer of Faith in the Elect, which is the true incense ascends to this *Altar*, that the soul may be taken through *Justice* to the glorious mercy of the SON:—*Also*, when Faith is quickened from *death* to *life*, or *born its first birth*, then it will know the *Promise* of Christ, and is taken into the royal priesthood; then the *Temple* of the tabernacle of the testimony of Faith, between Christ and his Elect, will in God's time be *opened* to Faith; for the priesthood and works of Faith is the *Church* of Christ, who is the LAMB as was slain, having *seven horns and seven eyes*, which are the SEVEN spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth, *i. e.* to his Elect wherever they are found!

Now those *Seven spirits of God*, or powers of Faith, are in CHRIST, and are made known to Elect man in the *Regeneration*; for in the royal priesthood of Faith, which is the mystical union, and spiritual communion with CHRIST, Elect men will find they must receive those heavenly *Gifts* from Christ, through his divine mercy, to enter his glorious kingdom: Also let the Elect *understand*, the horns and eyes of this *Lamb* is his *Power and spirit*, which in the kingdom of Faith is inseparable, because CHRIST IS GOD; yet notwithstanding, in this I shall mention here, differ something from the *Voice* of the seven Angels, as that is in regeneration from the *fall* of man unto the *resurrection*, and include neither; but this includes Creation and Resurrection,

rection, and is all to shew forth his power and glory; but in this—the spirit rather incline to that *Witness* of his spirit that *stood before him and prophecied*, when he was in the condition of the Father: As *First*, In CHRIST is found that spirit and power of Faith, by which he created Adam and Eve of his own divine nature, which is Faith, and as so, were his own children when he was in the condition of God the Father!—*Second*, When created Faith fell under the power of justice, death, &c. through temptation; in CHRIST is found that spirit and power, to quicken Faith from this death to life for regeneration: and promise, himself would become a Son to his own power, and redeem his Elect!—*Third*, When Faith is quickened and taken into the royal priesthood; in CHRIST is found the spirit and power to assist, and help it through this sore journey of flesh, also give it power to prophecy of his coming, *i. e.* of its own salvation!—*Fourth*, in CHRIST is found the spirit and power to redeem Faith!—*Fifth*, in CHRIST is found the spirit and power to unite in spiritual and holy marriage with this pure *virgin* of Faith, that has *come through great tribulation*, and give spiritual *Birth* to his holy and spiritual covenant of grace!—*Sixth*, in CHRIST is found the spirit and power to seal and sanctify this spiritual *born* Son of Faith, for the kingdom of glory!—*Seventh*, in CHRIST is and will be found the spirit and power to raise Faith, which lay *sleeping in the bed of mercy*, to his glorious kingdom, and crown it with an everlasting crown of glory!!!—Therefore when Faith is quickened from death to life, and taken into the royal priesthood, those things will be *opened* and *given* to them by JESUS; and by the works of Faith, and divine assistance from heaven, be made able to receive the *testimony* of Jesus, *i. e.* the spirit of prophecy of your own salvation.

Those are the *seven spirits of God*, or the seven glorious *Stars* to the Elect, that are *held in the right hand* of Him that sits in the glory of *Mercy*; because by his

R,

mighty

mighty works of Redemption he gained to himself the high kingdom and glory of mercy, and with it all power ; and took possession of his kingdom of regenerated Faith, which is the fruits of that *Witness of his spirit that stood and prophecied before him* when he was in the condition of the Father ; and was the first fruits by regeneration unto God for Christ ; and now walk in the midst of the *Church of Christ*, according to his heavenly *Gifts* of the holy spirit :—For *understand* this,—if a Messenger is sent in the covenant of mercy, to *call* and tell them the will of Jesus, he may be called the Angel of the declaration, because he brings the message ; but the Elect are also Angels for the covenant of grace, as well as the Messenger ; for all must have the seal of the living God, being the last thing to enter the kingdom of heaven (except the resurrection). And when the Elect have received those gracious *Gifts* of the holy spirit, from Jesus, the *Ark of the testimony* of the covenant of Faith, and the *BOOK of LIFE* is *opened* to them by JESUS, to sleep in the bed of mercy to inherit eternal glory !

Again, when Faith fell under the justice of the Father and the power of death, it was then dead in itself from all knowledge of its ever, again, being in united friendship with God, till the quickening power of the sonship of God was given : For *understand* this—all the power of creation and generation is of the *Father* ; but all the *quickenings* power to Faith for and in regeneration, is of the SON, or the *Father* becoming a *Son* (John v.) “ For as the *Father* raiseth the dead, and quickeneth “ them, even so the *Son* quickeneth whom he will. “ For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed “ all judgment unto the Son ; ” *i. e.* all *judgment* over Faith in regeneration and salvation : Therefore Faith when created hearkened to the voice of Reason, and fell under the power of death, then when quickened from this death, or born from its womb or seed, it came forth in a *new* life, which is done by the spirit and power of CHRIST, who brings a *new life* out of this death

death throughout his whole kingdom of Faith: And this *Spirit* or *Virgin daughter of Faith* comes forth pure, and will not hearken to the voice of Reason; for as created Faith hearkened to the voice of Reason, but when *quickened* from that death for *regeneration*, it will not hearken to Reason: True it is, when this Virgin is *inactive*, man may, nay, will be tempted to evil by Reason, but this Virgin daughter of Faith, will not hearken to it; as when she is *active* it burns with *prayer* and *patience* as a Lamp of *sweet incense* that ascends up to heaven before GOD; and will go through *tribulation*, and come up to the *Marriage* with the LAMB righteous and pure! So John saw (Rev. xix.) thus, "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to HIM, for the *Marriage* of the *Lamb* is come, and his wife hath made herself ready, and to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linen clean and white, for fine linen is the righteousness of saints, and he saith unto me, write, blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb, and he saith unto me, those are the true sayings of God." So BLESSED are them that enter the *royal priesthood* of Faith, and work the works to go up to the holy marriage with the Lamb; *i. e.* to be united in spirit to JESUS, and have his royal Seal for the kingdom of glory!

C H A P. XVI.

JESUS puts forth another parable (Mat. xx.) "For the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is in an householder, which went out early in the morning, to hire labourers into his vineyard." The *kingdom of heaven*, is the glorious kingdom of CHRIST, and himself the *householder*, and the gospel, which is the declaration of the *kingdom*, is the *vineyard*, and is as

thus—There is an outward literal *Declaration*; and an inward and spiritual *Testimony* which come from heaven, i. e. the mystical union, and spiritual communion with JESUS, which is his royal Priesthood, or spiritual *Vineyard* of Faith, that he walks in, and assists his royal Elect by the influence of his holy spirit, and rule over them: And the outward or literal *Declaration*, the spirit of Reason (when transformed to it,) may walk in it, and make use of the name of Jesus, then do the best they can for themselves: Hence when the *Declaration* is made, men may come *and work in the vineyard*, and there is a reward promised, which men are sure to find according to their *works*: Now JESUS was he that uttered and brought in his holy gospel, and as so *went out early in the morning*, because he WAS and IS the glorious SON of *Mercy* that *arose* to heal and redeem his Elect, then *he agreed with the labourers to work in*, or by his declaration, i. e. *his vineyard*.

Moreover, since the holy *Gospel* was declared, and redemption worked by Jesus, and he ascended into heaven, it has proceeded according to the heavenly wisdom, and glorious mercy of CHRIST the KING of FAITH, that he is graciously pleased to *open* and *bestow* on his Elect; for the overflowing of the holy spirit of Jesus flows forth with a glorious increase of salvation mysteries to his Elect, and not *stand* as a dead letter: therefore the internal *seal and sanctification* of Jesus in the holy Gospel, is made known to Elect men let them live in any *hour of the day*; why? because they are sure to be *called* by JESUS, and *He opens the seals* at their death, that they may read in the BOOK of LIFE, and be united to, and recorded in, the ever living memory of Jesus, for eternal glory! But who has come back to tell this in *plain* terms before? So *one Hour* to the Elect in the holy Gospel is as a *Day*, and a *Day* as an *Hour*; or thus, *one day* as a *Thousand years*, and a *thousand years* as a *day*: For the holy Gospel is likened unto a *Day*; and the *coming* of CHRIST in spirit by his Messengers at different times,
are

are *Hours of the Day*; for when Elect Man come in a *Messengers Day or Hour*, the mysteries of the redemption, Seal, and sanctification of Jesus, will be made known to Elect Man for his salvation; and it is the same thing from Christ's ascending into heaven in person, to his coming in person to judgment.

Ver. 3. "And he went out about the *third hour*, and "saw others standing idle in the market place. And "said unto them, go ye also into the vineyard; and "whatsoever is right I will give you; and they went "their way." Now this world is the *field* for generation, and Christ come in person, and doth come in spirit, to *Call into* his holy gospel, and as so a *market-place*; because he gathers his Elect out of this world to his divine mercy. "Also he went out about the *sixth* "and *ninth hour* and did likewise, and also about the *eleventh hour*." Those different *hours* of the *Day*, are Messengers sent at different times, as, aforesaid, only this—the later the hour, the nearer the end of the day; and the *eleventh hour* nearer eternity than the *third*; and as Messengers come out one after the other, every one utters his voice nearer the *Seal* of the LIVING GOD OF FAITH, and every one prophecies in his *Day or hour*; for the mighty workings of Jesus on the spirit of Faith in the Elect, do not stand as a *dead letter*, but will bring the soul up to his royal and spiritual *Seal*.

Hence every one utters as he comes out, as thus, the *Apostles* was inspired and sent forth to preach Christ the *Son of God*, bear witness of his *death and resurrection*, to redeem his Elect, and *prophecied* of his coming again:—*John the Divine* received the holy Ghost with the other Apostles, yet he lived 'till Christ come again: And when *John* saw him (in vision) "he fell at his feet as a "dead man;" and he saw that JESUS *only*, could open the *Book of Life*; and saw and prophecied of the holy *Marriage, Seal, and Sanctification of GOD*, to enter the kingdom of glory; and that *Christ was GOD*, and prophecied again of his coming: But this book of John's
visional

visional Prophecy, was for Christ to *open*, when he come in spirit at the hour of death to his Elect, bringing his *reward with him*, i. e. to give spiritual *Birth* to his holy covenant of grace, and seal this spiritual born Son of the *virgin* daughter of Faith for his glorious kingdom:—And *John Reeve* come out and declared in plain terms, that *Christ* was the very ETERNAL GOD, and no one could redeem the Elect but *Him, that created all things*; and prophesied of Christ to *come*.—ALSO there is *another* come out, in the *spiritual Birth* to the holy Covenant; and in *plain* terms, declares the royal PRIESTHOOD of Faith, Holy MARRIAGE, Spiritual BIRTH, Seal and Sanctification of CHRIST, the God of Mercy, to enter the kingdom of glory; and *prophecies of his coming* in spirit; to seal his Elect, and *warns* them to *prepare to meet him*: Now he that hath *wisdom*, let him *understand*, the coming of Christ in those *Hours* of the *Day*, and also to mind in what *Hour* of the *Day*, he himself lives in, by this warning given. Yea, the royal Priesthood, and holy Gospel, is the same in spirit to his Elect: For *Him* that has last come from Christ, doth declare CHRIST *has opened the Book* of John's prophecy to his Elect; and will open it again to his Elect. Also this Messenger (last come) from JESUS, is the first man that has declared those things in *plain* terms, why? because he is come from Christ with the VISITATION and Acts of Christ, according to *John's* prophecy; and as so, not only a witness to that *prophecy*, but also to the *Acts of Jesus* on that prophecy; for which cause he doth declare the Priesthood of Faith, spiritual Birth, Seal, and Sanctification of the king of Faith, to die in the bed of mercy, to be raised to everlasting glory, in *plain* terms! ALSO *prophecies* that Christ will *shortly* come again in spirit to *open the Book of Life* and Seal the Elect his brethren for the kingdom of glory:—And though this Messenger has come out from JESUS, in the spirit that the Elect were *born* to, and *sealed* for glory, declaring their condition in *plain* terms, and the first

first from Christ that ever did ; yet, all others that has gone before are in the bed of *Mercy*, or second *paradise* before him ; for it is the same thing in the priesthood of Faith in the holy gospel, from first to last, relative to the seal of Christ, let them come in, to *work* the works of Faith in any *hour* of the *Day* ; for the powerful works of Christ in his redemption, seal, and sanctification which is of the holy gospel, is bestowed, and has its effect in one Elect man, as in every Elect man, from the day of his *ascension* in person, to the day of his coming to *judgement* in person ; being sure to be called upon, and sealed by Jesus.

Every Messenger that comes from Jesus in his holy covenant of grace, comes higher up, or nearer his Royal *Seal* to enter his glorious kingdom ; therefore BLESSED are they that can hear and follow *Him* that hath come out from the ALTAR, *i. e.* him that has been given *birth in spirit*, from under the *Justice* of the *Father*, to the glorious *Mercy* of the *Son* ! and called up into the high MOUNTAIN of Faith ! and saw the glory of the Son in his royal *Mercy seat* ! and his royal spiritual *Seal* and *Sanctification*, and offered the *prayer of Faith*, after the spiritual *Birth* was past, at the *feet* of him that sits in the glory of *Mercy*, for his royal spiritual Seal and sanctification, which is the *great and grand ALTAR of Faith* ! and after this, *sent back to declare it* ! and *prophecy* to the Elect, his brethren ; and this *Declaration from CHRIST is faithful and true*.—And he also saw in this manner the Elect was called, and came up to the seal of the living God of Faith and was sealed, *i. e.* after the spiritual born *Son* of the pure *Virgin* daughter of Faith comes forth, it offers its prayer, to be *united* to the king of Faith, in his holy covenant of *Mercy*, and WAS and IS united to Jesus by the *immortal spirit of regenerated Faith*, and there remain in the breast of the everliving KING of Faith and *Mercy*, which is the records of his royal seal for the resurrection to his glorious kingdom !—*This*, this Messenger was shewed by
the

the *boly* ANGEL of the *Covenant of Grace* ! and he saw it, and doth declare it : and the *boly* ANGEL of Faith, *i. e.* JESUS is his *Witness*. And although he *saw* it, and is the first that came back to declare it in *plain* terms ; yet them that were before, are in the *bed* of mercy, or *second* paradise before this Messenger.

Again, The seed and spirit of Reason may, and do come and *work in the vineyard*, but it is only on the *bare word* or Declaration aforesaid ; and when they transform themselves, or are transformed into the declaration of Jesus or his Messenger, they are relieved from their former *captivity*, *i. e.* from the *burthens* that has been laid upon the souls of men by the *priest* of Reason and *tradition of men*. ALSO they go forth and preach in the name and power of the Messenger, and by the declaration they overpower and subject the spirits of others ; for if men are offended with the doctrine, become angry, then to wrath, then to blasphemy, they who preach see those men fall before their face ; and if men are patient to hear they must submit, why ? because they cannot overthrow it, nor get from it. NOW this power is given to the seed and spirit of Reason, when they take the letter of a Declaration that comes from heaven, and preach it up, and spread it abroad, which is the *workings* of Reason *in the vineyard* ; and they have power given them over Reason in other men, and relieved from former burthen, and this is a new flow of life, or emulated joy to the soul of man, which has been called the “ ASSURANCE of ETERNAL LIFE,” because they are above the hope of Reason in other men ; yet they themselves act by the spirit of Reason, on the declaration of another Man ; yea, Reason doth expect eternal life for this *Work*.

Ver. 8. “ So when *Even* was come, the lord of the “ vineyard saith unto the steward, call the labourers, “ and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto “ the first.” This *Even* is God’s time, hour of death, or at the end of all time, and, as I said, every one is
sure

sure to be *called*. NOW when any Elect are *called* in old age by the Messenger, *they* will enter the Royal Priesthood and works of Faith, then at death are called by JESUS through the Justice of the Father, and are given *spiritual birth*! and are *Sealed* by Jesus to enter the kingdom of glory! When as another Elect being who *come into the Vineyard* before him, may be *called* after him, *FOR* *understand* this, the Elect are *called* to, through the Justice of the Father, and *chosen* by Jesus to enter into the holy *Marriage* and spiritual *Birth*; but the seed of Reason are never *called* by Jesus, therefore as so, the Elect are called *first*, and take their *part* in the *first resurrection* which is their *Penny* or portion; but the seed of Reason are *called* by the *Angel in justice*, and let to know, they have received their *penny* or portion, then fail in their expectation, and go *murmuring* into death. ALSO when the Elect are in the spiritual *vineyard*, and work the works of Faith, the power of sin and death is made known to them, and they are so much incumbered with it, that oft'times they think they are unworthy, and almost impossible they should be saved when looking at the purity of the DIVINE MAJESTY, and the impurity of their own soul, and as so afraid they will be the *last* called if ever called by Christ; but the seed of Reason are filled with high emulation on the outward word or bare letter, and by that think he is already in the favour of Christ; therefore expect to be *first called*, and have a greater portion than the Elect whom he looked on beneath himself; but when Christ comes, he that feared to be *last* called, is the *first* and he that expected to be *first* called, is *last*, i. e. the seed of Reason is never *called* by Jesus, as I said, then go their way, *murmuring against the good man of the house*, whereas Reason never entered the royal priesthood of Faith to be *called by Jesus*. Yet when Reason *come to work in the vineyard*, they are taken from their former *bondage and labour*, and in this they are external *healed*; but will go their *own way* again, with another language; for they will soon begin to wander anew, with the declaration, in

their own wild priesthood, even in the *Day* of a Messenger; for although Reason has the declaration to *work in*, yet he will set it forth according to his own understanding, and there is no more done for him in the spiritual than to bring him *out of Egypt* to die *murmuring in the wilderness*; yet the seed and spirit of Reason, is very ready, nay the *first* to go forth and preach, according to his dark wisdom on the letter, and thereby expect to be *first* called, and will be the *last* called.—ALSO two men may come in the days of a Messenger, and take the declaration, the *one shall be taken* into the priesthood of Faith, and *the other left* in the priesthood of Reason on the bare letter, and *he that is left* will tempt others into that priesthood if possible, and think he is doing his duty, and God good service.

Again, as I said, there has been Messengers come from CHRIST in his *holy gospel*, and prophecied in the royal priesthood of Faith:—Now Reason is very eager to take the letter into his own understanding; and when the Messenger is dead, and they that prophecied in his day, then Reason will take possession of the letter, and teach his *own way*, in his *own* priesthood; at which time there is silence in the *nether heaven* of Faith, touching public declaration and prophecy; and this *silence* in heaven is from the death of one Messenger to the sending forth of another; NOW men in their travail of this life, may come and take the letter if they please, and work in it according to their own will; and when they do, they will construct it to their liking, and excuse themselves as they please, and make to themselves concerning the promise as they like, which is their *own agreement*: Then when the *Messenger* comes who is a *Steward* sent of God, (and utters his voice from God) *He Calls* to them that *work in the vineyard*: NOW this is also reconing day; but here the *Messenger* also calls to Faith, which is the *first* and it will hear and *come and see*; then in God's time will be quickened and taken into the royal priesthood, when those of Reason will

will go their *Way murmuring*, in wroth: ALSO, some men may have been working on, or in the letter many years, and some but few; and some scarce know the last declaration; but he that has faith to obey the voice of God when the *Call* comes, will be *taken* (let him have worked in the letter a long time or short) and enter the royal priesthood of Faith; when others will go *their Way murmuring* with the bare Letter, whereas it is all they *agreed* for, because Reason will *agree* for nothing, but his own wisdom on the bare Letter, and at last go off *murmuring*, saying he has done great things, *born the burthen and beat of the day*, yet has all that he *agreed* to have.

C H A P. XVII.

YEA, the holy gospel is likened unto a *Day*, and that day, as a *thousand years*, or to what time God please; for it is from CHRIST's ascending into heaven in person, to his coming to judgment in person; so when a Messenger is sent from Jesus, to declare his Will unto the Elect his brethren, that is the *Hour, Day, or Time* of open declaration and prophecy, to the Elect that are called into the spiritual *Vineyard*, i. e. the *priesthood* of Faith;—also the life of man is as a *Day*, and when the spirit of Faith is quickened into life, and taken into the mystical *Union*, and spiritual communion with JESUS which is the priesthood of Faith, then is the *Gospel* began to that soul; and when the *Virgin* daughter of Faith offers her prayer, (which is the incense of Faith) that ascends to God for his divine assistance from heaven and *patiently waits* God's time, it is the *Works* of Faith in the holy gospel; and when Jesus is graciously pleased by influence of his holy spirit to help this

Virgin daughter of Faith, it is *day-light*, or sunshine to that soul, yea, when the spirit of God is thus active to Faith, it is *bright* spiritual day-light to the soul, according to this portion of Faith that is given him.

Understand also, that the power of the holy gospel and redemption, is worked on the souls of Elect men, living in any *hour of the Day*, i. e. in the time of the *Apostles*, or in the time of the other *Three*, who came out one after the other, and as they came uttered their voice nearer the seal of JESUS the *Living GOD* of *Faith*; therefore the Messenger when come, taking the man by his declaration, this man's life is in the Messenger's *Hour* or *Day*; and men come in at different age of life, which is different *hours of the day*, i. e. one man may come in, as soon as in full manhood, as Adam was created to, by the LORD GOD of heaven, which time is the *third hour of the Day*, and he will follow the Messenger, and the prayer of obedience is found in his soul, that he may be *obedient* to him, and *stand still* and *wait* the salvation of God: *Anon*, the power of the declaration assisted from heaven, becomes great in the soul, and is made sensible that Faith is *fell* in him, and disunited by death from God the Father, (it being created under that power) and is, as it was in the man Adam; then there is a *new life* quickened out of this death, which is the *Virgin* daughter of Faith, *born* to the promise of Christ, and made able to offer her own prayer, i. e. the prayer of Faith in the royal priesthood, which is the *sixth hour of the Day*, and his love will become double to the Messenger and his brethren; then this *Virgin* daughter work the works of Faith against the powers of death and hell, and patiently *waits* Christ to come, according to promise, also prophesied of by the Messenger, and that soul will be found worthy;—Then CHRIST in his own time come in spirit and give the *spirit of prophecy*, i. e. Christ has come in spirit and will come again, to seal the soul for his GLORIOUS KINGDOM,

KINGDOM, this is the *ninth hour* of the day, then his love than is treble to the Messenger and brethren.

After *this*, the soul work the *Works of Faith* greater than before, and keeps stedfast *Watch*, not to be found *overcharged* with the *Folly* of Reason, *Cares* of this life, and *Drunkennes* in Reason's priesthood, but *patiently wait* the Lord's coming; then he is again found worthy by those *Works* of Faith and called to by JESUS through the justice of the Father, and Jesus unites in spirit with this *Virgin* daughter of Faith, and gives spiritual birth from under that Justice, to his own spiritual and holy covenant of Mercy, i. e. *Mercy of the SON!* this is the *eleventh hour of the Day*. AFTER this, the spiritual born son of Faith is sealed in the holy kingdom and covenant of Mercy to be raised to glory! and falls asleep in Mercies Bed, and will be raised to glory! and this is the *twelfth Hour*, then the *Day* is ended; as the soul has gone through the mighty *Works* of Faith and *tribulation* in the holy gospel, which is of the sonship of God for salvation!—then *the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of CHRIST, and he will reign, in and over his kingdom of regenerated Faith, for ever*; and all done in a *Day or Hour* which is the life of a man.

Yea, one man may come in young which is the *third hour* of his day; another more advanced in years, the *sixth hour* of his day; another further in years, i. e. the *ninth hour* of his day; and another in old age, which is the *eleventh hour* of his day; and he that come in the *vineyard* in old age Christ will bring through the mighty powers of death and hell, and may be called *first*, and sealed by Jesus for eternal glory; for the glorious King of Faith is very able to make man *perfect* in what time he please. ALSO some men may have *Revelation* before others; and some have the gracious *Gift of prophecy* before others, who have *worked longer in the vineyard*; for it is in the will and power of JESUS, who is the KING of Faith, and HIGH-PRIEST in his royal *Priesthood*; hence all quickening and ruling power to Faith is in, and of Jesus, and he can make a man
perfect

perfect in his working, from the *eleventh hour*, as he can from the *third* or *sixth*; for ALL the Works of Faith, and *Prophecy* of Faith, is a Witness to the *Spirit* of Jesus, and *they* also witness and prophecy to each other, and one for another; and this unites *them*, in the LOVE of Faith, and is the CHURCH of CHRIST! for it is the nature of Faith to rejoice in another's *revelation* and *prophecy*. Why? because it WILL BE his own portion; but Reason will question it, and murmur against it, because he is *withering away*: FURTHER *understand*, when the seed of Reason is called by the declaration, it has but the bare letter, and it is the *third hour* with them, let them be at any age in manhood, and there they will stand, at the *third hour*: but when the Elect are called at the *third hour* (as I said some are,) then, in God's time, Faith in them is *quickened* from death to LIFE, which is the *sixth hour*; then they are taken into the Priesthood of Faith, (but the seed of Reason is left with the bare letter, in his own *Wild priesthood*,) and to the Elect this is the *second or last Call* relative to the declaration of the Messenger, for then they must follow him up to the spirit of *prophecy*, holy *Marriage*, and spiritual *Birth*; and when *Even is come* the Elect who are taken into the *priesthood of Faith*, the second or *last Call* to them relative to the declaration, then they are called under the *Justice of the Father*, and it is the *eleventh hour* to them, and are given spiritual *birth* to the *Mercy of the SON*, and those are *they* that are *first called*, and have their *part in the first resurrection*; BUT Reason remain with the letter as he was *first called* touching Works of Faith, as the *third hour*, who is become *withered and cast forth* by his own wisdom, and the last called, *i. e.* not called at all, but under the justice of the angel, then he will *murmur*, whereas he has all he agreed to have; so Jesus said "So the *last* shall be first, and the *first* "last, for many are called, and few chosen," *i. e.* Reason stand as he was *first called*, but the Elect are *called* again, or taken into the *priesthood* of Faith, which but is the

the *last Call* of the declaration, and will be *first called* to the spiritual *Birth*; for the whole world is *called* to the outward declaration, but *few chosen* to enter the royal Priesthood, to be sealed by Jesus for eternal life.

Again, JESUS who was God the Father, and the God of Justice is now become God the SON, and the God of Mercy, and it was him that created the Man Adam, from whence the Elect proceeded by generation; therefore HE was the *First*, because he created Faith, and he only could redeem it, and as so the *Last*: Also HE WAS, and IS the *First* that quickens Faith from death to life for regeneration; and the *Last* to give it spiritual *Birth*, or translate it, into his glorious and holy Covenant of mercy, that HE has purchased to himself by going through his own Justice; also Adam was the *first Man* of Faith for *generation*, and HE who created Adam became the *Last Man* of Faith, for to bring in *Regeneration*; for without the divine assistance of Christ in regeneration, man can do *nothing*; further, CHRIST WAS the *First* that uttered and brought in his holy gospel, and that offered the royal and *essential* Prayer of Faith, before the THRONE of the FATHER, (which is of justice) for his Elect, which is his *Kingdom* of Faith, or his *kingdom Israel*, that IS and WILL BE under the attribute of his divine Mercy! and IS the *Last* to seal *them*, and raise *them*, to his glorious kingdom: So throughout the whole kingdom, covenant, priesthood, and works of Faith CHRIST is the *First*, and is the *Last*.

Moreover a *Messenger* may come out from JESUS, and declare HIS Will, yet many that he declares it to, may by and according to that declaration, enter the bed of mercy, before him that declares it; therefore it is the nature of Faith to rejoice at his brother's increase, also to pray for one whose soul *mourns* for the Priesthood of Faith, and mercy from Jesus; for all must be sealed by JESUS to enter his glorious kingdom, and it is of no signification who is sealed first or last, so that he is but sealed by

by JESUS; for all will be raised by the call of Jesus, and all together be crown'd with the glorious crown of mercy, in the glorious and merciful kingdom of the SON OF GOD: But Reason coming to work in the vineyard, it will agree for no more than his own wisdom on the bare Letter, and there will remain at the *third hour* of the *Day*, and never will or can enter the priesthood of Faith, which is the *sixth hour* of the *Day*, or beginning of regeneration; and Reason being in his own wild priesthood with the letter, it will have *wild* conceivings, and preach a doctrine *in the name of Christ* that will *deceive many*, but he is kept out of the priesthood of Faith by the internal Angel in justice, who is *the cherubim and flaming sword, who turns every way to keep the WAY of the tree of life*; and when Reason is called by this angel he will *murmur* against Jesus who is *the good man of the house of Faith*, whereas Reason has all that ever he *agreed* to have.

Again, " All the Elect are sealed by JESUS to enter his glorious *Kingdom*, i. e. the spiritual born son of Faith is united to *Jesus in spirit, in his high covenant, and glorious kingdom of divine mercy! and for his mercy!* and although the person dies, or fall asleep in this bed of mercy, yet this spirit of regenerated Faith is of an *immortal* nature, and is united to CHRIST in GLORY, and *lives* in the memory of the *everliving KING OF FAITH*, which is the *lively record* of his royal Seal: And when the *number of his Elect are accomplished*, (which is only known to himself) then the firmament or heaven will open, and the mighty JESUS, the royal KING of Faith, will come in *person, full power, and great glory*, with his mighty *angels* Enoch, Moses, and Elias, and his heavenly *Host*, and *stand* between heaven and this earth, and with HIM, bring his royal Seal and the *records* of that seal, and cry with a *loud voice* unto his Elect who are all sealed, and the spiritual power, in the *word* centers to the soul (which produced this Regenerated Faith) that is *sleeping* in the bed of mercy, to all the
Elect

Elect as to one man, and *quicken* it into a new spiritual and glorious life, and also give it a body of fine flesh and bone that this purified spirit of Faith may shine in, to shew forth the inexpressible glory that God has given it, for *obeying* his voice here in time, and *following* through the powers of death and hell ! And in this very manner the Elect will come forth, and ascend to him, and with him in glory ! Therefore when the Elect are *sealed*, and prophecy of Christ to *raise* them to his heavenly glory, and fall *asleep* in this bed of mercy ! then, — When they find themselves again, it will be in a *New* and glorious everlasting *Life*, that CHRIST has called his Elect to, and gave them ; and from the time of their *falling asleep* in the bed of mercy, to their finding themselves with Christ in glory, it will appear to them but as a short and sound *sleep* !

The next appearance in the *Resurrection* is the glorious order or *host* of *Cberubims*, i. e. *Children* of Reason that died in minority, and the internal angel in justice did not take place in their soul, so are not charged with the Law of Reason ; and this is the *MERCY* to Reason, according to God's suffering the created cherubim to become flesh, that he may gain to himself millions of *Cberubims*, and glorify them in a body of flesh and bone, to live in the royal presence of him and his Elect in all ETERNITY, as well as millions to go their way under the justice of the angel : Then when JESUS *Calls* to Faith to come up to HIM, this ALMIGHTY VOICE is so great that the *Child* or *Cberubim* will hear the echo and follow, they being appointed of God for glorification—Yea from the mighty effect of those *Resurrections* *Death* and *Hell* will also *give up their Dead*, i. e. the seed of Reason that are *Dead* from mercy and sealed for the wrath of God, the internal angel in justice will *give them up* under his seal to enter on the *second death* which is *Wrath* as a lake of fire burning for ever, FOR think not that Jesus speak into the souls of them that are sealed under the power of death and hell ; for if he was, his

T

voice

voice is so infinite, powerful, and pure, that it would give them *new Life*.—But the contrary as I said, Jesus speak into the souls of his Elect, who are sealed with his own royal Seal and raise them to his own glory, which is the glory of Faith;—and the *echo* of that voice will raise the *Cberubims* to the height of Reason's glory, who will come forth and appear with bodies spiritualized (like unto the Elect) and glorified with great glory, which glory will be given to this *ckerubical* Reason that is not charged with the law;—and is refined by twice passing through death; yet *understand* that this glory which is given to Reason, is much inferior to the glory of Faith, which is the glory of GOD:—Then, from the effect of those *Resurrections* the power of *Justice, Sin, Death, and Hell* will be let loose, and never will be stayed any more, and the Angel in *Justice*, will do the will of God according to the attribute of *Justice*, and give up the dead that are under his seal, who will come forth in wrath, both in and under the power of *Death and Hell*, and there to remain for ever.

Again, When JESUS was here and declared his holy gospel, from HIS utterance, this very effect was worked on the souls and spirits of men in this life: Also when any of his Messengers who come out in HIS holy covenant of grace and royal priesthood of Faith, are here, the same effect is also worked on the souls and spirits of men in this life, because the voice of Faith is uttered, and it is to call the Elect to the *Mercy* of Jesus, which is a true Emblem of the great *Resurrection* at the end of all time; for when the VOICE OF GOD is uttered, it is to *Call* to Faith, and is directed to the womb or seed of Faith in the Elect which in itself is dead, according to the justice of the Father; and by this *Voice*, and *power* from heaven in God's time, Faith is quickened from this *Death* into a new life, and taken into the royal priesthood to work the works of Faith; a true *Likeness* of CHRIST's *coming* in person, *calling* to his Elect, and *raising* them to his everlasting GLORY! Then, when the *Voice* is uttered, and centers to the womb of Faith, Faith quickens

quickens it, brings it forth into a *new Life* which is of Faith, and is taken into the priesthood of Faith,—this, is the intent of the *Call*, and errand of the Messenger ; Yet, there will remain the outward word, bare letter, or a fragment, what the spirit hath left, and *this* is the *Echo* from the royal and true utterance, which some of Reason's seed can and will transform themselves to, and live in it, or by it, according to their *own wisdom*, i. e. of Reason, and by virtue of this *Echo*, they receive a greater emulated joy, and have power given them over others of Reason, that cannot come to be quickened by this echo, which will give them power to speak the language of the cherubim in a great degree, but they never can come into the priesthood of Faith ;—Now this is the true *Likeness* of CHRIST when he raise the cherubims to their glory, by the *Echo* of his divine VOICE calling to his Elect, and raise them to the glory of Faith, which is his own glory.

Also others of the seed of Reason are effected through the *Call* or utterance, who will come forth in anger, and from thence to wrath, persecution, and blasphemy,—then in this, *death and hell give up their dead*, i. e. the internal angel has sealed them for the *second death* under wrath ;—and the power of the declaration will bring those wrathful spirits forth that the Messenger and the Elect will see and know *they* are sealed for wrath ! For under this seal of death, come forth the spirit and power of wrath, that will *war* against the spirit and power of God ; and if possible they could they would not only destroy the spiritual *Virgin daughter* of Faith, but also the spiritual *Son* when born of this pure *Virgin* to the seal of Jesus unto life eternal ; for such is the nature of wrath, to judge and condemn the wisdom of God by this wrathful spirit, that is sealed under the power of death and hell ; and had it power, would destroy the works of God, in and according to his divine mercy, by acting against regeneration, which is *spiritual sodomy*, in that they will *war* against, and blaspheme his divine wisdom and power anew, instead of *repenting of their evils*, and in this,

death and hell give up their dead, even in the face of the Messenger; but they are under the power of the angel and can go no further than permisson, which is a true *Likeness* of death and hell being given up, at the *great day* of judgment when CHRIST comes, to call his Elect to glory; and the cherubim will follow by the *Echo* of his divine *Voice*.

Further do you *understand*; the *third hour* of the *Day* is a dangerous time, Why? because its at the time of the resurrection of the cherubim by the *Echo* from the utterance, which (as I said) *many* will hear, and come to the outward word or bare letter, then, they will speak a new language, go into emulation, and from thence go wild, and become tempters even to the Messenger, and too apt to pass judgment; for being incapable of the *first resurrection* to Faith, they must stand at the *third hour*, and will seek to do as they like, and go their *own Way* with the Letter, which is their *penny* or portion in full, thinking there is no wisdom like theirs, for which cause they take liberty, and will attempt to cultivate their wisdom:—AND whereas, the *Elect* when called in at the *third hour* (which is as the state of *convincement* to them,) I would have to be very careful, for it is a dangerous *time*, for the *Cherubim* that is rose by the *Echo* of the declaration will *tempt* you, and your own spirit of Reason within will *tempt* you, and it is uncertain how long man may stand at the *third hour*, and how many things may happen; Yet, there is another *Call* to come relative to the declaration; so it is good for the Elect to *watch* the temptations of those days; and it is on every ones part to be careful not to act as the Cherubim, but to have and mind the true Prayer of obedience, meekness, and patience, to *wait the Lord's leisure* for the second *Call* relative to the declaration;—then, you will come to the *sixth hour*, for that is the beginning of regeneration without regard to man being in old age.

FURTHER of the *Kingdom* of *regenerated* Faith, which is the *Kingdom* of CHRIST: Now to gather in and compleat this harmonious, united, and glorious *Kingdom*,

dom, the consequence, run as such, the first, is *last*, and the last *first*; for Christ WAS and IS the author and beginner of regenerated Faith; and as so the FIRST, and the last to seal it for, and raise it to, his glorious kingdom, and as so the LAST: Also the *royal Elect*, when Faith was rose from death to *Life*, taken into the royal *Priesthood*, received the *Testimony* of Jesus, *stood before him and prophecied* concerning his merciful redemption when he was in the condition of the Father; and WAS his *Witness* of his spirit, *Olive-tree*, or *Golden-candlestick* in whom the royal Incense and prophecy of Faith *burned*—and were *gathered in*, and *united* unto God for Christ, and were the *first fruits* of regenerated Faith unto God for Christ: And *have his Father's name written in their forehead*, because they were *Virgins* unto and for Christ: Therefore God the Father left his glorious throne which was of justice, and invested it on *Moses* and *Elias*, become a true son to that power, redeemed his Elect,—become the royal Bridegroom, to the pure *Virgin* of Faith, ascended into the high heaven of mercy, and took possession of this, his kingdom of VIRGINS, or fruits of regenerated Faith, of that *WITNESS of his spirit* or OLIVE TREE, that *stood and prophecied* before him, when he was in the condition of the *Father*!

Moreover, When JESUS had uttered his holy Gospel and Regeneration, *Redeemed* his Elect, and *ascended* into his high kingdom of mercy, then, *Regeneration* was worked by *Him* and to him in HIS holy Covenant of *Mercy*, Why? because HE was become the royal *Bridegroom* to the pure *Virgin* daughter of Faith; therefore when Faith is called to, and given birth, or rose from death to life according to the *Voice* of the *First Angel* in regeneration, then they have his divine assistance, and his *Testimony*, which is *HIS Spirit of prophecy*, given from heaven, then they must work their *Way* to the voice of the *seventh Angel*, and this is the other *WITNESS of his Spirit*, OLIVE-TREE, or GOLDEN CANDLESTICK in whom the royal incense burns, which *stand before him* and prophecy now HE is in the condition

condition of the SON, and they are gathered into, and united to him, in his holy covenant of grace, and sealed by him for his high kingdom the GLORY of *Mercy*! And although this is the second, or *Last Witness* of his spirit, yet it is the *First* that bore a spiritual Son in regeneration to be sealed by JESUS; for though the *first* Witness stood before him and prophesied when he was in the condition of the *Father*, and was gathered in, and united to God for Christ and the *first fruits* unto God for Christ, yet this spiritual *Virgin* could not bear a spiritual Son in regeneration to be sealed by Christ, until God become Christ, and worked the redemption, &c. NOW this *last* Witness is regenerated to the SON, for HE unites in holy marriage to this pure *Virgin*, and begets to himself a spiritual Son of this *virgin Daughter*, and he ascends into the high *Mountain* of Faith, and is united to Jesus, and sealed by him for glory; so the *first* is *Last* and the *last* *First*, i. e. the *Last* Witness is the *First* that bore a Son to Christ; and the *first* is, (and will be) the *last*, for in the morning of the resurrection there will be a translation relative to the *first* Witness, and the *seventh Seal* will be opened in full, for then, the *Virgin* will bring forth a Son; and Moses, Elias, and Enoch, will be translated from the glory of Justice, to the glory of *Mercy* which is the glory of CHRIST; and *All* enter into the high and mighty glory of regenerated Faith which is the glory of Christ!—So BLESSED, are them that enter the *Priesthood* of Faith, for the mercy of Christ is their *reward*!—But as this world is the *Field* for Generation, the Elect are gathered out of it, in and for Regeneration; and the consequence of Redemption and Regeneration, to compleat the kingdom of Christ run as such, the *first* is *last* and the *last* *first*!—But it is all one of the other, *in* the other, *on* the other, and *for* the other, so of no signification who is sealed *first* or *last* for this Kingdom; for Christ is KING HIGH-PRIEST, FIRST and LAST of this kingdom! Now you may see how the kingdom of regenerated Faith is gathered together, and who those *Witnesses of his spirit*,
Olive-

Olive-trees or golden Candlesticks are ; so I pray for, and recommend the works of Faith, prayer, patience, and the love and assistance of Christ, *Amen.*

C. H. A. P. XVIII.

AGAIN, of the *First Resurrection and Regeneration*, which IS the works of Christ on the souls and spirits of his Elect, to recover his *lost kingdom* of Faith : Therefore, when the Voice or spiritual power of GOD comes from heaven according to the second *Call* touching the declaration, or Voice of the *first angel* in regeneration, (Rev. viii.) “ And the *first angel* sounded, and there “ followed hail and fire mingled with blood and they were “ cast upon the earth and the *third* part of trees was “ burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up,” i. e. When the voice or spiritual power of God calls to Faith, which is *dead* through transgression, and *quicken* it into life and sensation of itself, then the *justice* of God follow and poured out on it as *bail*, and his wrath as *fire* ; and it is *mingled with blood*, i. e. in this life you must wade against, and go through the powers of Reason, and the *smoke*, and venomous spit and spue of death, and hell ; and at last lose yourself in death in your own *blood* under the *Justice* of the *Father* : *And they were cast upon the earth*, i. e. Adam was created of this *earth*, and God gave him a life or soul of Faith, which hearkened to Reason, and in that broke its own law, then died ; then it was become *fallen* human nature ; and Reason become the actuator of the man, then upon this *earth* which WAS and IS in active life, those *plagues* was and are *Cast* ;—*And the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up* : Those *trees* that was *burnt up*, are the *Imaginations* of Reason, which *mount* very high, and *spread* wide, whereby man may think to *hide* himself

himself from GOD; and all the excuses that he has or can form to excuse himself, yea, on sayings of scripture, which Reason constructs to his own liking, which is as Standards to them, and become *trees* and spread wide, wherein and amongst, Reason thinks to hide and excuse itself: The *green grass*, is all the *hope* or refreshment of hope, and all delight in expecting the favour of God for salvation according to his former thought which was of Reason; and all excuses for acting as men of the world, (or of Reason did or do, in the common acts of life) is all *burnt up*, and departed as a *smoke* in a mighty wind, when the mighty power of the LORD GOD of Heaven calls to Faith to raise it from death to life for regeneration:—And the *third part* of Trees being burnt up, is this,—that although the life of Elect man, is so agitated and pressed down by the mighty weight of Justice that all his power and hiding places shall depart from him, yet there is a *part* left for God, whereby he brings *Life* out of death, *Light* out of darkness, and make the man anew by regeneration:—Now when those things come to pass which is at the SIXTH HOUR of the Day, or beginning of regeneration, Man will find he cannot *hide himself among the trees* from God; but must stand as a dead man *naked* and bare before the LORD GOD of Heaven; and those *plagues* is the *Virgin daughter* of Faith born to, and she must *labour* to be brought out of death, and through death by the power of Christ.

Moreover, when Faith is rose from death to life, or born from its womb or seed, then from this spirit or *virgin Daughter*, Christ makes Elect men anew by regeneration; therefore when CHRIST was here he did many miracles, whereby men were made perfect according to creation in generation, and in this the *Father* is glorified in the SON; For if men had Faith, that *He* could heal them, and asked him, it was to them according to their Faith; hence (Mat. xi.) John sent his disciples to Jesus saying to him, “ Art thou he that should come or do
we

we look for another?" *Jesus answered and said unto them,* "Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see, the blind receive their sight, the leper's cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached unto them." Now, *this* was done to the external sight of man, and hearing of the outward ear; but it is the *internal* works of CHRIST on the soul that make men *perfect* unto salvation; therefore when Faith is rose from death to a new life according to the voice of the *first Angel* in regeneration, then the dead is rose internal for regeneration, and then the soul finds itself very *poor* and unable to heal itself, then of consequence in great need of the salvation of CHRIST, and when the promise of Christ is given, then is *the gospel preached to the poor*, but this is all internal and spiritual, in the royal priesthood of Faith.

Again, this spirit or *Virgin daughter of Faith* being a new life in Elect man, and assisted by the divine incomes of Christ, for to it is given a *censer with incense*, i. e. Faith when rose from the dead is the *censer*, and its prayer the *incense* which ascends to HEAVEN for the divine assistance of CHRIST, and makes Elect man *speak* with a new *tongue*, and *see* and *know* the power of God, and of Christ, which before he was *blind* to, and to *hear* and *understand* the Will and Power of God which before he was *deaf* to; for as Elect man has Reason in him and when that actuated the soul, man was *dead* to those things: But by this new life of Faith which will grow strong, and Reason get more weak, than the man *sees* his infirmities, leprous spots and the strong dye of sin; for the power of regeneration is so great, that it separates Faith from Reason, life from death, or as it were soul from body: FOR as at the Voice of the *first Angel*, "There followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and were cast upon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt up." *This* that *was* and *is* to be *burnt up*, cast out, or done away, is the spirit and power of Reason in Elect man; for there is only Faith, which is God's *part*

of Elect man, that can stand; and by or from Faith Elect man is and will be made *perfect* by regeneration: For this do you *understand*, Elect man may fitly be compared to the leper; but as *bail, fire, &c. is cast upon the earth*, and Reason is *burnt up* and done away, and human nature greatly refined; in this the *leper* is internal and spiritually *healed*! and Elect man made *perfect* by regeneration, to stand before the LORD GOD of Faith!

AGAIN, this *fallen* human nature God himself took on him and made it alive in Christ, who became a true SON to the power of the Father, and had on him a body of flesh, blood and bone of this earth, that he created in Adam, and as so was *perfect Man*, and had God's justice and Wrath poured out upon him, and was subject to *hunger, thirst, cold, sorrow, and death*, as he had on him *fallen* human nature; and also to the *mock, scourge*, and persecuting power of Reason, &c. which is the spew of death and hell: But in his keeping the law of Faith, and his wading through those mighty powers, *fallen* human nature become so much refined, that he ascended into *Heaven* in a body of this *Earth*, which he will inherit as a glorious *Trophy* in all eternity: ALSO when here, in *His* standing against, and *overcoming* the temptation of the devil, by his *keeping* the law of Faith? His losing himself in *Death* in his own blood under the justice of the Father! And *quickening* out of that death, unto a new and glorious life of Mercy! Now in this he shewed himself God. As (Mat. xxiv.) he said "Heaven
"and earth shall pass away, but my word shall not pass
"away." (John ii.) Jesus answered and said unto them,
"Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it
"up!" Again (chap. xi.) said "I am the resurrection
"and the life he that believeth in me, though he were
"dead, yet shall he live." Also (chap. vi.) Jesus said,
"I am the bread of life—whoso eateth my flesh and
"drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise
"him up at the last day—the words that I speak unto
"you

“you they are spirit, and they are life.” In this, HE speak as God, and in the spirit and power of the very eternal God:—But, in HIS true *obedience* to the power of the Father; and *worshipping* the Power of the Father which was God! And in his *declaration* and *prophecy* as a *servant* to the Power of God and of heaven in the royal priesthood of Faith! and in his *trouble* of soul! And in his *prayer* to heaven for divine assistance, and that the cup might be taken from him, “But not my WILL, but “THINE be done!” His *Thanksgiving* to heaven! and his death commending his Spirit into the hands of the Father, which was of *Justice*! In this HE speak as *Man*; and acted as man, and was of the *prophets*, and of his *brethren*, who have his *testimony* in regeneration, which is the *spirit of prophecy*, and WORSHIP GOD!

Moreover, as man took Reason in him at the *fall*, and it became the *Actuator* of man when Faith *died*, so when Faith is *rose* from death to life, and human nature come into act, then, the nature of Reason gets weak in man, by *devils being cast out*, &c. and the soul of man greatly *changed*, and human nature grow strong, and can *bear*, *see*, *walk*, and *speak*, for it can *work* the works of Faith; and *declare* the wonderful works of regeneration; and has given to it the spirit of PROPHECY from heaven! Now this *human nature* God himself took on him, and worshipped *God* in the SON; and worked the works of Faith unto, and for his glorious kingdom of *Mercy*, and prophesied; and in this, God became a *fellow-servant* with his Elect, and was *of the prophets*, and kept the GRAND COMMANDMENT, *i. e.* “Worship God.”—Thus you may see the great and grand *Union* between God and Elect man, by the power of *regeneration*; for what is regenerated is the very *nature* Christ took on himself, then of consequence *it* is regenerated to him, and without *regeneration* there is no union:—FOR by regeneration the *angelic nature*, *i. e.* the nature of Reason, is *cast out* of Elect man, and done away, and is *cast on*, or center to them, that are under

the power of death and hell, and in this God's wrath is *doubled unto them double* for lightly esteeming and *dispis-*ing the regeneration of Christ, and persecuting them who bore his *word and testimony*: but *human nature* (aforesaid) is so much *refined*, that Faith become the essential soul for salvation and eternal glory! and Elect man will ascend into *heaven* with a body of this *earth*; which he will *inherit* in all eternity, as a glorious token of the power, and mercy of Christ's *regenerating* Elect men, from under the powers of justice, sin, death, and hell!

Again, when Christ *was*, or any of his Messengers in regeneration *are here*, Reason never can *understand* Regeneration, Why? Because they are *dead* to it; hence when a man declares himself a Messenger of CHRIST, Reason thinks to find something extraordinary, for he looks for *pure* Reason, as it was in the *Angel before his fall*, and as man has *fallen* Reason in him, he is subject to infirmities, and sin, which Reason may soon find, then they say he is no Messenger of GOD, for his declaration is contrary to their imagination, then if they find no evil in the man, they will make evil of the man, as they did of the LORD CHRIST, because the language is a *parable* to Reason, yet he finds himself condemned by it: Thus they look for their own *purity*, and their own nature to be made *pure*, and for external *signs*, by which they are lost, for they never can know how Elect men are made *perfect*, and united to God by *regeneration*, until they find it in, and to their own condemnation.

C H A P. XIX.

AGAIN, as to *casting out devils*: Now the devil always did and will while he can, act against God according

ing to his creation in generation by driving or binding men, &c. from their appointed and proper stay of senses and disposition, as madness *raving*, madness *melancholy*, *dumbness*, *sullenness*, *despair*, &c. and even *infirmity* of body: For when Reason is given up to eager desire, much disappointed, or to grief, not able to attain according to its will, and have its own way, then this oftentimes *drives* the senses beyond the proper stay, and the life is *turned*, and the mass of blood *drowned* with confusion, like unto the sea or great river by a mighty *wind*, being drove over its banks or bounds, and drown a fertile piece of land which bring forth corn or fruit, so drowned in confusion, that its appointed bounds, stay, shores and springs can be of no use, to bring forth its former fertility; which, will produce uncommon and *unclean spirits* in men, which are *devils*, and will *drive* men to uncommon and unclean actions and expressions; and sometimes it comes through the blood in generation, and in this, is *the iniquity of the father visited on the children*.

Further, see Matt. viii. where "two men met Jesus "possessed with *devils* coming out of the tombs exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass that way;" also, Mark v. and Luke viii. speaks of a man, "and he was "bound in fetters, and in chains, which he break in "pieces, neither could any man tame him, and he was "driven of the *devil* into the Wilderness, and he was "day and night in the mountains, and in the tombs "crying and cutting himself." NOW, let the number of men, be as it will, yet it is the same miracle wrought by JESUS to shew forth the *power of GOD*; for one man by this *unclean spirit*, may be drove *many* ways, and to *many* evil and unclean actions, called *devils*, which is the *Legion*, for Legion means no certain number; "And "when JESUS came, he commanded the *unclean spirit* "to come out of the man, or men."

Again, when this *unclean spirit* or *devil* has full power over the man, it is very eager to keep his possession; yea, when HE appears who hath power over it, this
spirit

spirit soon *know* it, and also knows he shall be *tormented*, as (Mat. viii.) " Behold they cried out, saying, what have we to do with thee, *Jesus thou Son of God?* Art thou come hither to *torment* us before our time." Therefore the power of Jesus took hold and bound this *strong Spirit* which was *master of the house*, for it *drove* the man or men, to *many* uncommon, evil, and *unclean* actions, which are called *Devils*; and this *Spirit*, or spirits, *knew* Jesus had power over it, and to *cast it out*; and it being eager to live, therefore would agree with Jesus, and *besought him* to have another dwelling place, as ver. 31. " So the *devils besought him*, saying, if thou *cast us out*, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine; and he said " unto them, go," i. e. granted their request: This *herd of swine* was men and women, who owned Moses and the name of *Israel*; and by the letter of *Moses and the prophets* according to their imagination formed a worship, offered prayer and incense, and dedicated it to the *God of Israel*, and made use of his *Name*; and this overtopped all who did not own the Law of Moses; thus Reason by the letter and its own hope was *mounted* high up in imagination, which is this *Mountain*; and they were a superstitious, possitive, stubborn people in their will and way, for which they were called *Swine*, and their teachers, priest, &c. the *herdsmen* that *fed the swine on this mountain* of imagination.

Those *Gadarenes* by all their lying imaginary *assurance* and self assumed, high conceited power, by their doctrine, could not cure or help the man, " And he was exceeding fierce so that no man might pass that way." And when Jesus came the evil spirit or devil, *knew him*, and *cried out*, for see Mark i. " He was casting out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speak, because they *knew him*;" but this devil or *legion* was suffered to speak, and *cried to Jesus* not to be *tormented*, or if *cast out*, that they may *enter the herd of swine*, yea, this spirit is eager to live and reign in man, so its theme or desire is, that if it be *drove or cast out* from one dwelling,
it

it may enter into and reign in another; therefore when Jesus commanded this *unclean spirit to come out of man* or men, it *died* or ceased acting, and passed away as if it had never been there; and in this way it came out of the man, and quickened in those people, which is the *herd of swine*; for when they saw that Jesus had *cast out the legion*, the *spirit* of fear, dread, anger, dislike, &c. quickened and took place in them.

Yea in all their high self-conceit, in worshipping GOD they never could *cast out the devil, nor cure the man*, but when JESUS came he did; then they knew the power and doctrines of Jesus was far above theirs; and the *Spirit* of anger, dislike, fear, dread, &c. took place; then, their conceited imaginary power was struck with confusion, and *fled hastily down this hill or mountain, and was choked* in their own *waters*, which was their hope for the waters of Euphrates in the land of Nod is the *river, sea or lake*, that waters the spirit of Reason, which is their *hope*; and through this hope with reading the scripture they go up this *mountain* of imagination; then when the power of GOD is manifest to them, they *run down this mountain, and are choked in this water*, which is their hope.

Those that *fed the swine* called *herdsmen*, i. e. their priest and teachers, *fled and told in the city and country what was done*: "And they came to Jesus and see him that was " possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, " and clothed, and in his right mind, and were afraid;"—Further, the devil in the man *cryed out*, "What have " I to do with thee Jesus, thou son of the most high " God," and desired not to be *tormented*; AND when they saw the *legion was cast out*, then the spirit of fear, *torment*, &c. took place in their souls, and produced the same language as the devil in the man before he was *cast out*, praying, *Jesus to depart their coast*, because they would have nothing to do with him, nor be *tormented* by him! But, *the man prayed to be with JESUS*; and Jesus said, "Go and shew how great things God hath " done for thee;" thus, the *devil was cast out*, and entered

tered the *herd of swine*, by the powerful miracle of Jesus, in number about *two thousand*, which was not *Hogs*, (for they were *unclean*, and their flesh forbidden to be *eat* by the *law* of Moses, and this was amongst the Jews who regarded not keeping of *Hogs*) but man cannot bear the devil to be in himself, so any where else but at home.

Moreover, " And in the *synagogue* there was a man " which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cryed with a " loud voice, saying, let us alone, what have we to do " with thee thou Jesus of Nazareth, art thou come " to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the *holy* " *one of God*;" (Luke iv.) Here also the devil *knew* Jesus, and was suffered to speak and say who Jesus was; " And " Jesus rebuked him, saying, hold thy peace and come " out of him."

Again, (Mat. ix.) " As they went out, behold they " brought a dumb man possessed with a devil: and " when the devil was cast out, the dumb speak; and " the multitudes marvelled, saying, it was never so seen " in Israel! But the Pharisees said, he casteth out " the devils through the prince of devils." *Also* ch. xii. " Then was brought unto him one possessed with a " devil, blind and dumb, and he healed him, insomuch " as the blind and dumb, both speak and saw! " And all the people were amazed, and said, is not this " the son of David? But when the Pharisees heard it they " said, this fellow doth not cast out devils but by Bel- " zeebub the prince of devils;" and Luke, xi. said the same; NOW you may see and know how the devil was *cast out*, and who it *entered into*; for it produced in the Pharisees, lies, anger, murmur, prejudice, wrath, blasphemy, &c.—Also, (Mark ix.) a man brought to Jesus his son, which had a *dumb spirit*, and of-times it had *cast him into the fire*, and into the *water*; and " when " JESUS saw that the people came running together, " *he* rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, thou *deaf* " *and dumb spirit*, I charge thee, *come out* of him, " and

" and enter no more into him." And (Mat. xvii.) called a *lunatick*, and the spirit which possessed him a *Devil*, THUS you may see how the *devil* acts against GOD, in his generation according to his creation by driving some into madness *raving*, others into madness *melancholy*, and to be *deaf* and *dumb*, and on a sudden shall *start* and drive the being into many evils, even to *destroy* itself! Anon he will become *sullen*, and deaf and dumb to all you say; others he will drive into *despair*, &c. and also to *infirmity* of body, as Luke xiii. where a woman was bound by the *spirit of infirmity* eighteen years, whom Jesus healed! And when Jesus did any of those glorious *miracles*, the Jews and Pharisees sought something to accuse him with, as ver. 14. "and the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because Jesus had healed on the sabbath day." Why was it? because the *devil* when cast out, entered into *them*; and Jesus called him *hypocrite*, and told him *what they would do* on the sabbath day, saying, "and ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom *satan* hath bound, lo, those eighteen years, be loosed from this *bond* on the sabbath day?" Thus, JESUS cast out devils, and restored men to their *right mind*, and disposition; and by those mighty MIRACLES, men, &c. were made *perfect* according to creation and generation: and in this, the FATHER is glorified in the SON; for the *Devil* will act against GOD, not only to destroy the *Order* of his works, but his *Works* also if possible, and seeing a miracle done in the *kingdom of God* is angry, for *he*, likes miracles done according to his own will and power, for his own kingdom to *shine*.

C H A P XX.

THE foregoing miracle was to make men perfect, according to *creation and generation*, that man may have

his natural senses and power, to act his natural and lawful business ; But, there is *spiritual madness*, being *those* in their natural senses, that will receive instruction and power of men to preach CHRIST unto salvation ; and he whose dark understanding of the redemption, springs forth into emulation, to fancy he can preach the *Will and Power* of Christ unto salvation, and knows nothing of HIM, but as he fancies, by imagination on the dead letter ; others have said, to be "*Affured* of eternal life," and ready to devour him that questions them ! Others will *curse* men to eternity, because one's confidence differ from the other ! Thus the spirit of emulated Reason drive them into the wild priesthood of Reason which is the *wilderness*, and there they dwell on the *mountains and among the tombs* ; i. e. they *dwell* in the letter of the *Prophets*, and of *Christ* and the *Apostles*, and *John Reeve*, which are dead to them, which is their *Tombs* ; and they will *garnish those Tombs* because it is their *dwelling* ; and can construct it their own *way*, and go out on those *mountains* of imagination, and there rave and roar *amongst those tombs* ; and sacrifice themselves according to their imagination, which is *cutting themselves* : and if they are told their *Act*, and condition, and that they should not preach the salvation of CHRIST and not *know* it, nor *sent* by HIM, which is their *chains or fetters*, yet they will *break those fetters and chains*, and be so raving that it is a hard thing for a man to *pass* this spirit, which is *the Devil as a roaring lion, seeking whom he can devour*.

On those *Mountains* of imagination in the *Wilderness*, some will have free will, and some free grace given to all, at least to them joined in society of like confidence, but if you leave them it is in danger : some an universal redemption : and some to be saved without works ; some by their works : some will own election ; and some will have God to be understood one way, and some another : Some will have Christ the second person in the trinity ; and the very God ; some have him all person and no influence ; and some all influence and no person : and some have

have their *imagination* on the letter to be, the *spirit* and influence of Christ: So they divide the *Godhead* and make a confusion of *Christ's redemption*; and turn his *Record* to their self-serving purpose, either to a *merchandize*, or for a *Weapon of war* against each other; or to cultivate their dark wisdom and *cloak* their evil:—thus, this *evil spirit* drive them into the *Wilderness*, and on those *mountains* to seek congregations which is kingdoms, and hold forth, and cry “*lo here* is Christ, and “*lo here* is Christ,” that salvation teachers are become as plenty as *Trees in a Forrest*.

Further, on those *mountains in the Wilderness*, and among those *Tombs*, are gathered together, the *tribes of the whole earth*, and are in number as the *sands of the sea*; and they act on two gigantic hypothesis; the *One* is their *assuming* to themselves the PROMISE of CHRIST, made to his Elect, and their *disobedience* to the GIVEN PRIESTHOOD of Reason: and the *other* is their taking the Letter of JESUS or the Gospel, into the *Wild Priesthood* of Reason, and there *teach and preach* (by the *spirit* of wild Reason,) salvation for them through Christ, yet *war against* HIS holy Spirit, HIS Regeneration, and Salvation; now those gigantic powers the Spirit call *Gog and Magog*, who proclaim against, and *War against* CHRIST the KING of FAITH; and this *Wilderness* is so great, that every one is become as it were a *god*, and make choice of his own *Way* to Heaven, or at least a *king* to do as he please and excuse himself; for if he do not like one salvation teacher, he may go to another, 'till he meet one agreeable to himself, or that will excuse him in his evil doings, and then cry “*Lo, there* is Christ, and *lo, yonder* is Christ; because the “*spirits* of those teachers, agree with *their evil spirits*.” Thus they cover the *Doctrine of devils* with the name of CHRIST, and so gather together, and become kingdoms in, and of the *dark Spirit*, and assume to themselves according to their own will, a power to, both naturally and spiritually to protect themselves, which is also

Gog and Magog: Others, there is that think themselves more wise than *those teachers*, and by reading the *Letter* and adding their own *wisdom* to it, which when blended together, then that stand for the living ORACLES of GOD and CHRIST, then *they* also become *kings* of the dark spirit, *but has received no kingdom*, yet they will try to cultivate their wisdom, and invoke God to own it, and hold argument whose wisdom shall be the rule, although it be *contrary* to each other: thus they *war* against each other, and use the *Letter* as a *weapon*: and if they cannot prevail to *rule* over others they remain *kings* in and of themselves, and are very zealous and dogmatical in *their Way*, and will endeavour to make as many as they can like themselves, and of themselves and regard not the *Law and given priesthood* of Reason; and as to the salvation of Christ, they will have it according to their own will, and go their own *Way* to it: thus the superstitious and emulated *Spirit* of Reason, which is the *devil*, *drive men into the wilderness*, and on those *mountains* and among those *tombs*.

Moreover, in this *Wilderness* is found, the devil will drive Men into many more different acts, and to transform himself into many different shapes, and act in or under, different colours; therefore when a man is given *birth and Spirit*, to the high covenant of Grace, and taken into the high Mountain of Faith in *regeneration*, and see CHRIST in the glory of *Mercy*, and his royal *Seal to enter* his glory of *Mercy*, and sent back by Christ, he is a Messenger in *regeneration*, and *come in the spirit and power of CHRIST*; and when he come he found himself in the midst of this *Wilderness*; then when he begin to utter his voice, there is a devil will soon know him, much admire him, call him by his name, and transform himself into pretended friendship with him, in order to *tempt* him, and promise him great things, for he see another *kingdom* coming beside his own, and greater than his own; then if he can tempt the Messenger to render the declaration and language his *Way*, that it may be brought
down,

down, and turned to the liking of those who will presume to *dispose of themselves*, or *kings* of the dark spirit, he will promise him a great congregation, which is a Kingdom in the *Wilderness*; but this cannot be done, because that is serving and worshiping the *devil* and his kingdom; then when the devil cannot prevail, he will will go away in *torment*.

Again, there is others that may hear what the Messenger has to say, and may be on his part to vindicate him in what they can, because the spirit of rank prejudice is struck passive or dead in them, and pass away, and it will quicken in others, who will murmur against him, and say they will have no more *Messengers of God*; therefore when a Messenger so *Come!* where shall he find Faith? for in this *wilderness* is found *spiritual madness, blindness deafness, dumbness, captivity, &c.* Yet notwithstanding this *foul spirit* of Reason, which is the *devil*, knows the power of *Christ* in the Messenger, also knows he shall be *tormented*; therefore when the power of *Christ*, in, or by his Messenger, take hold and *bind this strong spirit*, (who has been *master of the house*, and has ruled the same.) He is now commanded *out*, then he will be *tormented*, amazed, tremble, and in great agitation, but cannot get away; then he would agree with the Messenger to transform himself, or do anything if he may live and *reign* in the house, but *No*, he is *bound* and must come *out!*—Then, he will desire to *enter the herd of swine*; *FOR* when man come to know that the letter cannot save him; and to read of another man's faith, and forgiveness, and blessing in former times, that do not belong to him, but the man to whom it was given, and that he never saw nor knew the spiritual power of *Christ* unto salvation, nor what it is to be *BORN* of *WATER*, to enter the royal compact and priesthood of Faith, nor heard the Divine nature's *VOICE* of *Christ*, nor received none of his *DIVINE* incomes, nor to *KNOW* any thing of his kingdom, power, and glory, and that he was not born in Heaven above to the knowledge and
glory

glory of that kingdom, and how should he claim his inheritance there! But, was born on this earth, in sin, corruption, death, darkness and ignorance! And that all his gathered knowledge of the scripture, is by this **DARK RAVING SPIRIT**, and that it has **DROVE HIM** into the **WILDERNESS**, and on those Mountains, and among the Tombs of the dead! and that **HE** is as ignorant as he was born into this world! only condemned for what he has done! because it has been all in the wrong!!! Then, (as aforesaid,) when a man is made truly sensible of this, he is become as a *Child*! and in his right mind for Regeneration! for then this *raging devil* or *Legion* is cast out and entered the *herd of swine*! Now as I said, Moses in the time of the Law, forbid the eating of *Swines flesh*, nor to *touch* their dead Carcase, because they were *unclean*; (Deut. xiv.) And all men and women that are incapable of Regeneration are *unclean*, to Christ's **PRIESTHOOD** and **KINGDOM**, because this *devil* cannot be cast out, nor they be made *clean*, for which they are called *swine*; therefore the *devil* when cast out of Elect men for regeneration, it is sure to enter this *herd of swine*.

Moreover, the *Spirit and Power* of JESUS is a torment to this *spirit* of Reason; and when the Messenger utters his voice, it torments the earthy heart of man or men, because this *spirit* cannot flourish in his kingdom as before; then there is a *dread and anger* take place in their souls, and will desire the Messenger to *depart their coast* or company, and say, "they want no more Messengers of God," therefore will have nothing to do with him, nor want to be *tormented* by him: ALSO, when a man or men believe in the same letter, and of the same principles, which is in an inhabitant of the same country, and is so powerful in his argument, even against their will; for they have long sought to overthrow him, or *chain* him in his argument, but could not, for what *chain* they could put he would *break asunder*: but when the *Spirit* and power of *Christ* come, and *bind this foul Spirit*, and cast it out, then the man is become as a *Child*, and in his
right

his *right mind* for regeneration; and when they see this they are struck with wonder, fear, and dislike, then *quicken* and come forth cavilings, anger, envy, prejudice, lies, wrath, cursings, blasphemy, &c. Why is this? because the *Devil when cast out* of Elect Man for regeneration, it *enters the herd of Swine*, and produce this effect; and thus they are and will be *tormented*, and gather together with their dislike, raving, and cursings, and encourage each other therein.

Again, this foul *Spirit* of mad Reason will bind the man that if possible he shall be *Blind, Deaf, and Dumb*, to what is said concerning the *kingdom of Christ*; and *drive the man* into the *World*, to seek refuge among men of the world, or into the *Wilderness*, or any where else for life and delight beside the Messenger; for this spirit dearly like to be *master and ruler of the house*, and knows the Messenger, and that the Message is an enemy to him, and that it will *torment* him, though notwithstanding he would transform himself so as to infuse the *Being* to exert himself to act to the contrary; *this*, the Messenger also knows; but when *he* is took and *bound* by the power of CHRIST, he will *cry out*, and must *come out* of the man, and will *enter the herd of Swine*; for its theme and desire is to live, and if it be cast out of one dwelling, it may enter into another which is granted to it, and there it will shew itself, although it will endeavour to transform himself: FOR when any one is incapable of regeneration he is dead in the sight of *CHRIST the King of Faith* and the first resurrection for regeneration, and as so must bear their own witness to their own condemnation, and they will *war against the kingdom* of Christ, because they are *tormented* through it, and this the *Devil* knows, whether he is or is not suffered to speak: Also the Messenger will agree with the devil as, if he is very raving and roaring against the Messenger, and is not or cannot be *cast out*, the Messenger will tell him to join the *herd of Swine*, and there live as well, and as long as he can, because he do not care to torment him;
and

and the *Devil* that is cast out of Elect man, is suffered to enter the *berd* of swine; for every foul spirit will be gathered under justice, and *berd* together, for it is only capable of its own center, i. e. death and darkness; and he whose Devil is not so cast out for regeneration, will keep him within, let him think what he will to the contrary.

Further, the *Devil* can hardly bare reproof, or even to be questioned, or to be under restraint, or constraint; and when this comes he would drive the Being any where, or to any thing to get from this, and tempt or drive any where from the Messenger, for he dearly likes to have rule and be master: But alas! alas! where will he go to? He is within the *Orb* or *Ring* of Justice, which is full of eyes; and although this spirit accuse the Messenger and the Elect continually, yet this accuser is cast down, and will be no more heard; but if he can procure himself to live for ever, and this world to last for ever as his habitation, he may be under the first *Moses*, but if he die this declaration take him by the second *Moses*! ALSO when any possess this declaration, and the *Devil* is not cast out, he will feign agree with the Messenger to transform himself, and his highest delight of all is to a *Priest* or *teacher*; also in time he will look on his brethren beneath himself, and exalt his own wisdom above theirs, set a great value on himself, and think he deserve homage. This, was the act of the Serpent *Angel* after he was created, which is fully and truly declared by *John Reeve*, for the serpent did not create himself, neither did the devil in the man bring the declaration; also the devil will drive the man, first to one place and then to another, and to one thing and then another, for he cannot get what he wants, then of consequence no rest, and his restlessness is plain to be seen! Now this devil the Messenger would have out if possible.

Moreover, this *Devil* will take man into the Field of Argument, i. e. when a man profess the declaration, and own the Messenger, yet the *Devil* will be very strong, and

and full of murmur, and temptation in him at times : Anon he take him into this *Field*, i. e. " whether the
 " Messenger is truly from God or not, or whether he
 " may not be saved by some other Faith, or for
 " why should the doctrine of the Messenger exceed all
 " others, seeing they have the scripture, or as he is a
 " man under God's power, for what cause should not
 " God save him, if he is disobedient to the Messenger ;
 " and seeing the Messenger is guilty of natural faults,
 " why is *he* not as good a man, and what has he done,
 " that God should not accept him, as well as the Mes-
 " senger ; therefore why should he abide by the Mes-
 " senger and be so tormented, whereas he may live at
 " ease in the wilderness ?" But here the Messenger stand
 in the way, you must kill him to get there : Now in this
 very *Field* I have known *two*, one's devil has been *cast*
out, and the other's has been left to kill the Messenger,
 for if you curse the Messenger, or trample down the
 doctrine, you are guilty of spiritual *murder*, and would
 destroy a Son in *regeneration*, even as Cain did a son in
Generation, and you may be suffered to join the *herd of*
swine in the wilderness : but *Cain's mark* will be *doubled*
 unto you *double* : AND this I would have you *understand*,
 when men act together by, with, or according to their
 imagination on the salvation of CHRIST, and preach,
 and teach it, as the true *Way*, they invade HEAVEN,
 and *war against Christ's kingdom* of regenerated Faith ;
 and by their blind zeal and wrath, would cut off and
 destroy *regeneration* which is spiritual *Sodomy* ; for as the
 men of *Sodom* according to their wild desire and filthy
 nature acted together, whereby they would stop or de-
 stroy *Generation*, which is *Sodomy* ; and them who by
 their imagination act against, persecute, and would cut
 off and destroy the *regeneration* of CHRIST, is spiritu-
 al *Sodomy*, and this is "*The Great City* which spiritually
 " is called *Sodom* and *Egypt*, where also our Lord was
 " *crucified*," Rev. xi. 8.

Y

AGAIN

AGAIN as the *first* man Adam took Reason, which is the *Devil* into him at his *fall*, (and so it go on in generation) it needs must be *cast out* by the *second* Man Adam, who make men *perfect* by his Redemption and Regeneration; for God never *planted Reason* in man at his creation, therefore it will be *cast out or rooted up* by regeneration: also this foul *Spirit or Devil*, that is to be *cast out* of Elect man, in itself is *Heterogeneous*, and its *Vision* shew the form of many living creatures, such as God never created, and are in a manner, act in a manner, and move in a manner intirely different, according to the pure creation of God: and as I said, must *come out* of Elect man; therefore BLESSED are them that see this *devil or legion*, and to have prayer for him to be *cast out*, and not adore him, as their friend, God, and guide, and be very careful of *self conceit*, spiritual *pride*, and self assumed *wisdom*; and of an *evil eye* to your neighbour, *Envy*, *Judgment*, and *Condemnation*; and *re-joyce* when you see a *Devil cast out* for I had rather see one *devil or legion cast out*, and *enter* the herd of Swine, than to see a thousand *join* the herd of swine: and as I said before, where must the Messenger find Faith? Why, truly it must be *rose* from death to life, before he can find the *lively Faith* in regeneration; and that is brought on, and become the *Life and Soul* for salvation, and the Devil is *cast out* and enter the herd of Swine.

Further, in the aforesaid *Wilderness*, I have seen (in *Vision*) the *head* of a man separated from his body, and the head could and did *speak*: which did shew the knowledge of some men lay in the *head* and tongue only: also I have seen a strong looking *gigantic man*, with people gathered about him, and he made a *Proclamation*, and declaration, as do one mighty king when he declare *War* against another; and he said in his declaration, that whosoever would put themselves under his power, should be *protected*; and when I saw, he appeared *Low*, I went up to see, and he had no *legs* to stand upon, for they were *withered* away, neither could he move from that place;

place ; and I wondered he should declare he would protect others, and could not *help* himself, nor *move* from that place ; also I looked again, and lo his *genitals* was at his breast, at which I wondered greatly : and when I was told what I saw, *it was*—this gigantic man in the spirit and power of Reason who in the *Wilderness* proclaim against, and *War against CHRIST* the KING of Faith, and his royal *Priesthood* : and his having of no *legs*, is, he cannot *stand* before the LORD GOD of HEAVEN, nor against his *Power* ; and his not being able to *move* from that place, is, that he is *under* the Justice and Wrath of GOD, and cannot get away ; and his *Genitals* being at his *breast*, is that he beget and propagate a doctrine by or according to his own imagination.

Also I saw the *head* of a man with only his bare *backbone* to it, and that in a *perishing* condition, but the *head* was whole and could *speak*, but his *body* was burned up, and gone by his own wrathful *spirit*, and his own *Acts* and *blasphemy* against God ; and I wondered at the disagreeable sight : then there came an order, in that condition he should be *buried*, and there was no *grave dug*, but the *earth* rose up and left a *Grave* of itself, in which him and others was to be *buried* ; this also is the spirit of Reason, which is *dead* in the sight of GOD ; and by their acts against God, they become *burnt up*, rotten, or *withered away* ; yet notwithstanding there will that of them remain, to bear and *speak* their own witness to their own condemnation, and they will be *buried* in the *second* death in *Chaos* under Justice, *without the bands* of man.

AGAIN, *In this wilderness*, I have seen in *Vision*, Ducks with *serpents* heads, which was very *hurtful* ; and *Dogs* of different colours, and all with *wings* ; and on occasion could transform themselves ; and many more different creatures, but *beterogeneous* ; and the *skeleton* and *half skeleton* of creatures who had their time and action in the *Wilderness*, which is all according as the Spirit of Reason *drive* or *infuse* men to different acts :

ALSO I have seen the *Waters* of Reason, and *Fish* in those waters, which appeared very fine; and I looked and behold I saw the *fountain* from whence those waters came, and it was *filthy*, and I marvelled to see such *fish* in the stream; then I was told they were *serpents*, and very pernicious, although they bore the form, and appearance of *fine Fish*: and I also saw the *stream* could be *stopped*, or made *filthy* at any time, from its *Fountain*, which is, "the *great river* Euphrates in the land of "Nod;" and if Elect men take a fish of those *Waters*, they will be sure to find him a serpent.

Therefore every *foul Spirit* will be gathered to its center; and the *Devil* when *cast out* of elect man, will *enter the herd of swine*; and in this God's wrath will be *doubled* unto them; and although they gather together, and *war against* the *holy Spirit of CHRIST* and his *holy Regeneration*, yet "strong is the Lord God of Heaven "who judgeth them," and will surely *visit* them with the *Plagues* of his Justice; for when the *angel in justice* open to them his *BOOK of Justice and Death*, they will fall hastily from their *Mountain of Imagination* into the *Lake of God's justice and Wrath*, and there they are *choked, and perish!*

C H A P. XXI.

AGAIN, When the serpent Angel was created, he was an Angel of *Light*, and bore the name of *CHE-RUBIM*, because he came forth *pure*, by and according to the purity of *GOD's* creation; but when he rebelled against *GOD*, and was *cast down* from *HEAVEN*, then he bore the name of *Devil*, serpent, &c. And in him was the *Root or Essence* of *Darkness* and *Evil* in active life, that was suffered to go into *Generation*, and act against *God*, his *Children*, his *Works*, and *Kingdom* of

of FAITH; and when he was transmuted into Eve and Adam, he became a very tyranical and troublesome inhabitant in their, and their *Children's* souls, even unto this day, and as aforesaid must be *cast out*; for as he was transmuted into *Vessels* of Faith in active life, he needs must be *cast out* of them *Vessels* in active life, and go to its own center, i. e. the herd of Swine, and in this is every foul Spirit gathered together, and all in active life; then of consequence it is by or from Faith which fell in Adam, which is raised from death to life that Christ gather his kingdom: Therefore as I said, the *Devil* or *Legion*, which is of the *Serpent* Angel is cast out of Elect man, for he to be in his *right mind* for regeneration; he then is *become as a child*; and then the *Virgin daughter* is, or in God's time will, be born of the womb or seed of Faith, to the *Promise* and union of CHRIST; and is *a child for the kingdom of Heaven*; and a *Bride* to the royal BRIDEGROOM of Faith.

Further, when the Disciples asked Jesus *who is GREATEST in the kingdom of Heaven*, Jesus called a *little Child* and set him in the midst of them, as Mat. xviii. and said, "Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as *little Children*, ye shall not enter the kingdom of Heaven: whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this *little Child*, the same is GREATEST in the kingdom of Heaven." Now, here you may see, what state a man must be brought to, and *converted*, to be made anew by regeneration; for he must part with all his former wisdom which is of Reason, by Reason being as it were *pounded in a Mortar*, and cast away, and become as a *little Child* at the feet of Jesus, to be taught of him, and born to him, to enter his kingdom of mercy. For as the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN parted with what he enjoyed, which was the glory of justice, and was born of Faith a *Babe* into this world, to redeem and gain his new kingdom, which is the glory of mercy, even so must Elect man part with what he *possess*, and be *humbled*, and born of Faith in
spirit

spirit to follow Christ to enter his kingdom;—and this Virgin daughter is a *Child* of Faith, and *born* to the promise and union of Christ: (v. 5.) *Jesus said*, “and
 “whoso shall receive one such *little Child* in my name
 “receiveth ME:” *Because* the union is so great between Christ and this *infant* daughter of Faith, that the Messenger of Christ would rather err in offending of him, than err in offending of this *Virgin* daughter of Faith, why? because she is *born* of Faith, and to the works of Faith in regeneration, and IS and WILL BE the *pure Bride* to the royal BRIDEGROOM of FAITH:
 “v. 10. “Take heed that ye despise not one of those
 “little ones, for I say unto you, that in Heaven their
 “Angels do always behold the face of my father which
 “is in Heaven,” i. e. to this *Child or Children* of Faith is given a *censer with incense*, i. e. Faith so *born* is the Censer, and its *prayer* the incense, which ascend up to Heaven before GOD, for divine wisdom and assistance; and this *new Life* of Faith, which flow forth with *Wisdom, Obedience, Power, and Prayer*, is the Angel or *Angels* of Faith, (that is in the compact and priesthood of Faith, which is the *nether Heaven* of Faith) and *behold the face of the Father*: NOW, the *face of the Father*, is the power and glory of the Father, which is of justice, and the *Will of the Father*, is what *Christ came to do*, i. e. the works of Faith under the justice of the Father; and this *Child or Virgin* daughter of Faith by divine assistance will follow *Christ* in those works of Faith, under the justice of the Father; and in this they are so united to CHRIST as to be his *Brother, Sister, and Mother*: (Mat. xii.) So of such *Children or Babes* is found the fruits of Faith, and is the CHURCH and UNION of CHRIST! So woe! woe! unto them that persecute and war against those *Children*; for they are the church of Christ to inherit the *kingdom of Heaven*; It had been better for them that they had never been born, or died a child, than live to *persecute or offend* those children, v. 6. “But whoso
 “shall offend one of those *little ones* which believe in
 “me,

me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in "the depth of the sea," i. e. if this had been done when he was a child he would have been raised a *Cberubim to glory*, and have been of that heavenly *Host*; but now he is left *desolate* to be swallowed up by death and hell, let him set what value he please on himself: BUT *offences will come* and woe unto them by whom they come, for Reason will open his *Tombs* of death, or the *Tombs of the dead* against the *living in Christ*, and appear with his dislike, exceptions, demurs, murmers, complaints, anger, lies, wrath, blasphemy, persecution, &c. And like unto a ravenous serpent, cormorant, or cannibal, would devour the *Child of Faith*, and destroy the kingdom of Christ, was it in his power; therefore you are to *watch* this devil and *tempter*, for he will entangle you in his kingdom if possible; so whatever is offensive to the *Kingdom* of Christ put away, let it be ever so near or dear to you.

AGAIN, *Regeneration* begin by Faith being raised from Death to life, or the *Virgin daughter being born* from its Womb or Seed, and this is a *new Life* which Elect man never before enjoyed; and this *new Life*, by the mighty power of the regeneration of Christ, is to become the essential soul for salvation and its life, nature, sight, desire, and acts, is contrary to that of Reason, and *singular* of itself, because it is of and for the *Kingdom* of Christ; and by this *single eye* of Faith, Elect men must enter the kingdom of Heaven: BUT as Elect man has Reason in him which is an *enemy* to Faith and the kingdom of Christ, and will devour the *Virgin daughter* of Faith, was it in his power, even as a sharp frost will devour a young beautiful tender plant, by his strivings in and for his own kingdom, and setting forth the value and necessity of his acts, his consequence, with his fears and outcries, if he should fall in his kingdom, for he dearly likes to be strong therein, that he may act against the *regeneration of Christ*: NOW, here you may see the *Eye* of Faith, and the eye of Reason, and *two kingdoms* striving in one man; but the *right Eye* is of Reason, be-
cause

cause man was born into this World with and to that *light* and wisdom, which is of and for this World; but the *Eye* of Faith is not of and for this World, but *of, and for, CHRIST's* kingdom of Mercy and Glory; therefore this *Eye or Light* conveys to, and centers in *Mercy and Light*; but the *Eye or Light* of Reason conveys to, and centers in *Justice and Death*: therefore Jesus says, and "if thy *right* eye offend thee, pluck it out and cast it from thee; and if thy *right* hand offend thee cut it off, and cast it from thee, for it is profitable for thee that *one of thy Members* should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell," i. e. this *eye, hand or foot* is the sight, desire and strivings of Reason, in, and for his own kingdom; and of consequence will be *offensive* to Faith in regeneration, because of the opposition of their lives, natures, desires, and kingdoms; and it must be *plucked up, cut off, and cast away*, for it is impossible for Elect man to enter the kingdom of Heaven with the spirit of Reason in him: therefore this fallen Reason, which is the Devil, must be cast out of Elect man by regeneration, and go to its own center, i. e. the herd of *Swine*; and where this cannot be done man must be *cast away*, with *two* eyes, hands, and feet, as he was born into this world, which is a desire and power to beget his own likeness in generation, and power of action in this life, which was mostly against God.

Moreover regeneration is so *singular* of itself, that it make man *anew* for Christ! therefore the *old* man must be put *away*, and the *new* man *taken*, and be made by this *new life* (which is the *Virgin* of Faith) and the divine assistance from HEAVEN! For the *Life of this Virgin Daughter* is *pure*! and *flow* as *supernatural*, or rather *celestial fire*, which transcend the *finest crystal or diamond*! her life is *wholly bent on* the love, works, union, mercy, and salvation of Christ, and his kingdom! and her sweet flow of joy is of *one center*, which is in her brethren, and Christ, and thanksgiving to Heaven! and is always *longing for and rejoicing at* the divine incomes of Christ! and is of *meekness, innocence, and harmless as the lamb or dove*!

dove! and is of love, mercy, charity, and forgiveness! she has a strong *WATCH* over Reason, and will not hearken to him, nor have any thing to do with him or his kingdom! She has an eager desire to face her own Angel which is Christ! and bear him a spiritual Son in regeneration! She is born to sorrow under the justice of the Father, and there tremble at the power of God! and will follow Christ in the works of Faith, under the justice of the Father! For finding herself in a fallen state under the power of Justice and Death, her desire is to go through that to mercy and life! She is obedient to God, and will worship God and Christ! She is of long suffering, and can bear oppression, temptation, persecution, and the scourges of Reason, for Christ and his kingdom! She has Prayer which ascend to Heaven for divine assistance! and Patience to wait the Lords leisure! And in true obedience submit to the will and power of God! Also prays that she may not be left here in Hell, but by the divine assistance of Christ be brought through great tribulation: now this is the pure lamp of Faith, which burn chrystat and fair in the new born Elect, and is the sweet saving incense which ascend to Heaven, for divine assistance and *WILL* be brought through great tribulation, and come forth a pure *BRIDE*, meet for marriage with the *LAMB*. *NOW* this new Life being in the new born Elect, it will grow strong, and greatly change and refine the man; for as Faith grows strong, Reason will grow weak by Devils being cast out; for when the soul has tasted of the divine incomes, and assistance of *CHRIST*, he is in a longing condition, and state of prayer after more, and his affections is wholly set on the kingdom of Christ, and will be made able to bear the insults of Reason! also Reason may at times cloud the man, and drive him concerning his will and consequence, or like the *Raven* after the carrion of the earth; and men shall be in agitation, like unto a troubled Sea in a great storm; then this Virgin of Faith go into her ark or Bower, for she will have nothing to do with Reason, as I said, but when the Storm is over, and it is become Calm, then like the

Dove, she will come forth into act, and sweetly shine as the *crystal Lamp of Faith*; and it is by this *new Life* and the divine assistance of *Christ*, that man is made anew by regeneration; for this new life become the *essential soul*, for salvation: thus you may see man must become as a *Child*, and be *born again* for regeneration, to enter the royal compact and Priesthood of Faith, and *into* the works, love, mercy, union, and church of Christ; and the *Virgin Daughter* of Faith has no other *life*, or *joy* but in Christ, and her brethren, which is *HIS Church*, and there *she* will center and come!

C H A P. XXII.

WHEN the Pharisees came and *tempted* Jesus, saying, "is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for "every cause" (Mat. xix.) *and he answered and said unto them*, "Have ye not read, that he which made them "in the beginning, made them male and female;" because the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN created them of this *earth*, and breathed into them the *breath of life* which was his own divine nature, and as so, they were the *Children* of God, faithful and true, and came forth pure, by and according to God's creating the *Man and Woman*, which was joining his own *divine* nature to earthen *vessels*, which animated the Man and Woman; therefore they were *bone* of each others bone, *flesh* of each others flesh, and *life* of each others life; than of consequence they had great union with each other, also with the Lord God their creator; (because their lives was of him;) **ALSO** they were created *male and female* for generation, that by their great union in generation, that Faith as a *grain of mustard seed*, which was *sown into this earth* (in them) should come forth a generation of Elect men (who are of *Adam*,) to raise the kingdom of Faith unto
God

God and Christ : and *said*, " for this cause shall a man
 " leave *Father and Mother*, and shall cleave unto his
 " *Wife*, and they twain shall be one flesh : wherefore
 " they are no more twain but one flesh, what therefore
 " God has joined together, let no man put asunder,"
 for the Lord God created them, and *joined them together*
 for generation, and blessed them, and said unto them,
 " Be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth," that
 in and by generation, they should raise up the *fruits*,
 or *children* unto God, v. 7. they say unto him, " Why
 " did Moses then command to give a writing of divorce-
 " ment and to put her away?" (Deut. xxiv.) " He saith
 " unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your
 " hearts, suffered you to put away your wives, but from
 " the beginning it was not so;" Because in that pure
union, and blessing God created, united, and placed them
 for generation, as I said, but in steps the *serpent Angel*,
 i. e. the devil, between the *Man and Woman*, and sows
 his discord, strife, and contention, with his whole diabo-
 lical nature, and disturbed, or rather destroyed their
 united happiness, but he never could destroy their union
 in generation, for that God would have go on although in
 trouble and sorrow: AND Reason is very fond of a Law
 or Precedent, but not for to rule over him, or that he
 may be punished thereby, but that he may rule over and
 punish others; and Moses suffered this in his time, but
 it was for the *hardness of hearts*; than of consequence
 to their own condemnation : therefore I would have you
 look at the *pure ACT* of God in the beginning, and from
 that learn, and also to know and remember, who was the
 first that stept in between *Man* and his *Wife*, and caused
 discord, and then you may know who and what nature
 causes discord, and parts them even to this day : v. 9.
 " And I SAY unto you, whosoever shall put away his
 " wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry
 " another, committeth adultery : and whoso marry her
 " which is put away doth commit adultery;" Here Jesus
 speak to Reason in answer to their tempting him; and

if Reason do so, *put away his wife*, he do it in wrath, then at the same time let him be sure he is intirely clear of evil himself, and do so keep himself, otherwise it is to his own condemnation. So I would not have you seek justification after the manner of Reason; if you do you must take Reason's *Lot* and consequence, but learn how it was in the *beginning*, for *Adam* did not put away his *Wife* for *fornication*, but she repented of her evil, and was forgiven.

Further, Jesus did not come to give a *carnal Commandment* but for regeneration, and this verse tends to regeneration; for as I have said, Elect men are born into this world, with the eye of Reason, and to the wisdom of this world, because Reason is the life of man, and spiritually is called the *Wife* of man, because so closely united to man, that all his desires, acts, fruits, effects, &c. brought forth by man is of Reason, except some good acts forced out of him by the angel of Reason, for Reason is the *life*, and spiritual *wife* of man, and so closely united to man, as to make but one living and dying Being without regeneration: THEREFORE when the *Voice* of Jesus, in his Messenger come for regeneration, it centers to the womb of faith, give new wisdom, begets the prayer of obedience, in Faith to the declaration, and with an humble and patient soul, wait the Lord's leisure; then in God's time the *Virgin* daughter of Faith will be born which is a new life in the soul, and this new life which is Faith, the man must hearken to and abide by, because this is the *Life* and spiritual *Wife* of Faith, whereby man will truly understand the declaration, and the mysteries of GOD and CHRIST in his redemption and salvation, and will follow Christ in the works of Faith in regeneration, and by his fruits be found worthy of Christ for Salvation! ALSO Faith was the life of man in creation, but they hearkened to the voice of Reason, then it *died* or became *inactive*; and Reason took possession and became their *Life* and actuator, and so it go on in *Generation* until it is rose from that death to a new life

life for *Regeneration*; and by this *new Life* which is given to man for regeneration, he is taken into the royal *Priesthood* of Faith, and greatly refine him by the *Works* of Faith and regeneration, and unites him to *Christ*, and he is made *flesh of CHRIST's flesh! Bone of HIS bone! Spirit of HIS Spirit! and Life of HIS Life*; by the strong *Union* and *Marriage* with Christ! Thus you may see how Elect man is made *anew*, and the strong *Union* of Faith with Christ in, and by regeneration; and it is this *Virgin* daughter of Faith that is worked on for it, which man must hearken to, and abide by as a *Wife*, to bring forth the *fruits of Faith* unto Christ in regeneration: BUT Reason cannot *understand* the mystery of God in regeneration, nor *inherit* the kingdom of Christ, therefore would force itself to commit *fornication* with it, commit *adultery* with, and *adulterate* the Declaration of the Messenger, lead the soul astray, poison and corrupt the man; so the Elect must *put away this Wife* of Reason, because it is for *fornication, marry and cleave unto the wife* of Faith, to bring forth the *fruits* of Faith unto God and Christ; For regeneration must come forth entirely *Pure*, faithful and true; so the Elect do not commit *adultery* in putting away the wife of Reason, and marrying the *wife* of Faith: And *whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery*, i. e. some of the Seed of Reason will come and transform themselves into the declaration, then the spirit of Reason will rise into emulation, and say it belong to them, and claim their inheritance there; and by the *foul Spirit* of Reason *marry* themselves to the declaration; and with the *Spirit* of Reason preach it up, and set it forth, and excuse themselves according to their *Will* and *Way*, which is of Reason, and by this new wisdom, and *self assumed* authority, this *spirit* of emulation will go forth into judgment over others, and say his understanding is great concerning the *doctrine*, and at the same time all in the wrong! for Reason cannot enter the royal priesthood of Faith: NOW this *Spirit* of Reason is the *Wife* the Elect must

must *put away*; and the Seed of Reason will take this erroneous *Spirit* of emulation, embrace, and marry it; and with it commit *adultery*, or adulterate the declaration of the Messenger: and this is the true spiritual meaning of Christ in this verse, which tends to regeneration, (as aforesaid) for ver. 10. "His Disciples say unto him; "if the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry; but he said unto them, all men cannot receive this saying, save them to whom it is *given*." Because no man can *understand* the power, works, and mystery of Faith in regeneration, and its mystical union with CHRIST, except it be *given* him from HEAVEN; but they may understand a *carnal commandment*: ver. 12. JESUS said, "For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb; and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men; and there be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of Heaven sake, he that is able to receive, let him receive it:" Those *Eunuchs* for the *kingdom of Heaven*, is him or them, that hath no desire, propensity, capacity, or power, to listen to, and unite with, or be concerned with the spirit of Reason, to beget, give birth, propagate, give suck, or maintain, any false declaration, assertion, doctrine, works, or error concerning the kingdom of *Christ*, or false worship to God: Now CHRIST was a spiritual *eunuch* and was *so born into the world*, because he was born of Faith, and unto God to keep the *Law of Faith*, work *redemption*, and bring in *regeneration* to himself, that the Elect may be regenerated to *Him*: AND when the *Virgin daughter of Faith* is born of its womb or Seed, or rose to active *Life*, then Elect men will be *refined* by the power of Faith, and the divine assistance of CHRIST; and by devil's being cast out, and *putting away their wife* Reason, then they have a *strong WATCH* over Reason; and in time, will *lose* their spiritual properties, or power of acting with Reason, to beget, bring forth, or maintain any false or erroneous doctrine, or worship concerning the
Kingdom

Kingdom of God or Christ: Now this is the spiritual *Eunuch*; and thus are *Eunuchs made* for the kingdom of Heaven: But natural *Eunuchs* are made through the pride, desire, and barbarity of men; and them that are so born of their *mother's womb*, is by a defect in generation; but regeneration is intirely *perfect, pure, faithful and true*: THUS, you may see what it is *to put away a Wife* according to creation and *Generation*; and what it is to put away a *Wife* according to, and for *regeneration*, and how those *spiritual Eunuchs are made* in, and by regeneration, for *the sake of the kingdom of Heaven*; therefore *BLESSED* are them that can receive this, and enter into the works of Faith; for those things are done by the mighty power of regeneration, to and for the kingdom of Christ, which is the glory of Mercy.

AGAIN, as I said, *Man* must become as a *child* to enter the kingdom of Heaven; for when they brought unto Jesus *little Children* that he should *put his hands* on them, and *they were rebuked by his disciples*; but JESUS said, "Suffer *little Children* and forbid them not" to come unto ME, for of such is the kingdom of Heaven: And he laid his hands on them, and departed "thence." This also shew the necessity of regeneration; for Elect men must become as a *Child*, for the *Virgin* daughter of Faith to be spiritually *born*, who is a *Child*, of Faith unto Christ; *then* he put his *band* which is his power *on it*, and raise it up in regeneration for his kingdom of glory: ALSO by the mighty works of redemption, JESUS gained to himself the *Power* of the resurrection: therefore the Child of Reason that dies in minority will be raised to glory; for as this Child of Reason died in *minority*, the angel in justice never took place in the soul, and as so, was never charged with the law, so will be raised a Cherubim to glory: for the children of Reason that die in *minority*, and the *natural Ideot* which is the same thing in consequence will be raised *Cherubims* to glory, to compose that *heavenly Host*, or glorious order of cherubims in Heaven above in all eternity:

nity: THEREFORE *little Children* even of Reason are *suffered to come*, and do *come unto CHRIST*, and he *put his hand on them*, and raise them *Cberubims* to glory: Thus you may see one *Hand* of Jesus is on the *child* of Faith to *raise* it up in regeneration, and make it like unto himself; for his *kingdom of Faith* in mercy and glory! And his other *Hand* is on the *Child* of Reason to *raise* it, a *Cherubim* to glory: But none of the *Seed of Reason* but children, or them of that state or condition which is the *natural ideot*, can enter the kingdom of Heaven.

Moreover, the Elect all live to *manhood* for regeneration, therefore they must become as a *Child* for the *Virgin daughter*, or child of Faith to be spiritually born, and taken into the royal priesthood of Faith; and this *Virgin daughter* which is born of the womb or *Seed* of Faith, being in *active* life and espoused to CHRIST in spirit, has prayer to HIM; and can ask divine wisdom and assistance of HIM; but the *Seed of Reason* is incapable of regeneration, and the life of Faith cannot be brought forth in them; so they are as incapable to ask assistance of Christ in regeneration, as a dead man is to ask assistance of one that is living; but by this *Virgin daughter*, and the divine assistance of Christ, the Elect are brought on in regeneration under the *Justice of the Father*, and from one *Mansion of the Father* to another; and the higher you go, the more you know, and *tremble* at the *power* of God, and become a *Child* to it, and a *Servant* to Faith in the Elect his *Brethren*: Now such a one is GREAT in the *kingdom of Heaven*, and this union of Faith is the CHURCH of CHRIST, for when *two or threc* are met in, and for this *union* of Faith, and ask instruction from Heaven it *will be* granted; but when the seed or spirit of Reason transform themselves into the declaration, and set a value on himself for his great knowledge, and by the *spirit* of emulation question and judge the *Brethren*, such a one is not in the *kingdom of Heaven*, for he never has become as a *Child*.

C H A P XXIII.

ACCORDING to my former intention, I shall write a little concerning the *dispute* about the Body of *Moses*, then of consequence must declare *Moses's Body* and its *burial place*: Now as I have oft-times declared, the *Cherubim* was created under the Law of Reason, and in reference to God's divine justice; and there was a part, or *quality* of justice given to him, or centered in him through the *pure Act* of creation of the LORD GOD of HEAVEN, that whenever he broke the pure law he was created under, that in him would become a quantity sufficient to act on him and cast him down from Heaven, and from the presence of God; ALSO he was created on purpose to fall into generation, therefore was suffered to break that Law and fall from Heaven to this earth; but this *understand*, although he broke the *pure Law* he was created under, he never could break the *pure Justice* of that law, but let him do what he will, or go where he can, he will take it with him intirely *pure*, as it took place through God's creation; and when he was transmuted into flesh, he brought that *Law* and *Justice* into this world, which has continued to act on the soul of man to this day.

Moreover, when he was born into this world, he bore the name of *Cain*; and when he grew to manhood, this *pure Justice* took place in his soul, and he was charged with the *Law*; and this *pure justice* in the soul is the *Cherubim* and *flaming Sword* that turns every way, to keep the Way of the TREE OF LIFE: Then when he slew his brother *Abel* this *Cherubim* and *flaming sword* acted in the soul, and the *life* of *Cain* was arraigned before him, and *Cain* communed with him and called him *Lord*, for he acts as lord to Reason, because he is the *Cherubim* and *flaming sword*, or the *internal Angel* in justice, Angel of the Law, or angel of the lord, for he acts in the power

of the *Lord*, and is faithful and true, to do his *Will*: Thus the *Law* of Reason, and that *justice* was brought into this world, by this *Cberubim* that fell from Heaven; and it being *internal* in man, it will instruct man in a *Law*, and *Justice*, although Reason would run wild from it.

Further, *Moses* was inspired by the Lord God of Heaven, at the head of that, his *Attribute*, with the wisdom of this cherubical Law the angel was created under, that he may external and public give it forth to Reason; so *Moses* was the *anointed Cberubim* by his inspiration and was the *external* Angel of the covenant of the law; and this *Cberubim and flaming sword* is the *internal* Angel of the law; therefore when *Moses* uttered, and gave forth the Law *external* to Reason, there was the law *internal* in Reason, not only to witness to it, but also close with it; and when he administered justice by God's command, there was also justice in Reason, not only to witness to it but also close with it; and he also gave forth a priesthood that God's Justice should be *stayed* on them, and if they brought in their offerings to atone, according to that given priesthood, justice was stayed on them, and if disobedient to it, *plagues* was sent them; this also centered to, and in the life of Reason: Thus *Moses* had life to work upon; and his declaration and works, centered to and in the life of Reason, as well as his external written record, that is left to instruct Reason.

AGAIN, when this cherubim or serpent angel, transmuted himself into Eve, and so by nature into Adam, his infusion was so great, as to fill them so full of his own nature which is Reason, as to become their acting life; and they was subject to its law and the justice of that law, and that given priesthood because Faith which was their life, hearkened to Reason, so broke its own law, then for that *died*, and Reason took possession, animated and actuated them; and they was subject to its passions, law, &c. as aforesaid; AND although Reason

was

was so powerful in *Adam* and *Eve*, and *was* and *is* in their children the Elect by generation, yet *understand*, it was and is but temporary or superficial in them, because the LORD GOD did not place it there in his creation; but they took it through and by temptation, and God raise Faith from death to a new life and make Elect men anew by regeneration.

Moreover, Moses was the son of Adam, in the generation of Faith, and was an Elect of God for regeneration; yet he had Reason so powerful in him, that he was very capable of the cherubical inspiration; and the Lord made him a God to Pharoah, which is a God to Reason, (Exo. vii.) and he gave forth a law and priesthood, and executed God's justice, and judgment, in a body of *flesh* and person of Man inspired and instructed so to do by the LORD GOD of HEAVEN; so Moses acted on the life of Reason, and his declaration and acts centered to and in the life of Reason, and there it abode and was BURIED! for Moses being an Elect man of God for regeneration, Faith was rose from death to life in him, and he was taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, where he greatly communed with God concerning the great mystery and works of Faith, the kingdom of Christ, and salvation of the Elect; and he prophesied of Christ, and by this new life which was Faith, he WAS made anew by regeneration, and it became his soul for salvation; for with it he ascended into Heaven to the *Glory of the Father*, and was united to God for Christ: THEREFORE the angelic nature of Moses, i. e. Reason, the cherubical inspiration to give forth the law, and that priesthood, the administration of that justice, and the law itself is but the BODY of Moses; because he gave it forth in public, in a Body of flesh and Person of man; and it centers to, and is buried in, the Soul of the Seed of Reason! and when he died, or was translated on mount *Nebo* in the Land of *Moab*, all Reason with its Law, &c. was cast or struck out, and centers to the Souls of the Seed of Reason which is the *berd of Swine*, and there he was and is buried, and that is his burying PLACE, for he

ascended into Heaven with a life or soul of regenerated Faith: HERE you may see how soul and body of Elect men are separated by regeneration; for as I said, *Adam* and *Eve* took Reason into them by or through temptation, and although they, and the Elect their children was, and are so much troubled with it, and must be subject to its law and priesthood, and the angel of that Law; yet it is but *temporary* or superficial in them, and is but the *body* of Elect men, for they are troubled with it, only in this life, and spiritually is called the *Body* of the Elect; for Faith in them is rose from death to life, and brought on in regeneration to Christ, and it become their *Life* and *Soul* for salvation; and by or with it they ascend into Heaven, and there live and reign with Christ in the glory of mercy in all eternity; and Reason with its law, &c. is *cast out*, and go to its own center, or home, as I said before.

NOW, as to the *dispute* concerning the *Body* of Moses (as in *Jude*.) "Yet Michael the archangel when contending with the devil, he disputed about the *Body* of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said the Lord rebuke the." This *Michael the archangel* WAS and IS *Christ*, because he is the *Angel* of Faith, from whence Faith proceeded in creation, and it is gathered to him again by regeneration to make up his grand *Host* and Kingdom of regenerated Faith in his glory of mercy: This *contention* or *dispute*, was whe *Christ was tempted of the Devil*; and the *Devil* that tempted him was a *Man* of Reason, who then well understood the *Law* of *Moses*, and that given priesthood of Reason, and had a ruling power therein, and was very able to *tempt*; for he admitted Jesus to be the *Son* of God, as Jesus said he was, then he tempted him to *bow down and worship* in and according to the law of *Moses*, and *there* do his miracles according to the will and pleasure of the *devil his tempter*, so would have had the SON OF GOD come into Reason's kingdom and rule over it, and crown that by his becoming a *Son*: And his taking him to the *holy City*, was shewing him the
given

given Priesthood of Reason, where men must flee for refuge; and the *pinacle of the temple* was the stay of God's justice on the soul of man, which is the *height* of that *given Priesthood*; and the *exceeding high mountain* was the cherubical inspiration, which is the *kingdom of this world*; and would have given Jesus great rule and power in it, if he would but hearken to him, for the *power* of the tempter was, that this *Law and Priesthood* came from GOD by the *man Moses*, and Jesus being the *Son of God*, why should he not bow down to it, seeing it was of God? and could come to no harm, seeing *his angels had charge concerning him*? Here, in this *the devil rebuked Jesus*, but *brought no railing accusation against him*; but Jesus answered him from the book of *Moses*, which was given to Reason, (as I wrote Ch. II.) and brought no railing accusation against the *devil*: NOW the law and that priesthood, with all its forms and ceremonies was given to Reason as their *inheritance* and Reason will contend for it, but it is only the *Body* of Moses, and it may well be called the *Body* of Moses, for Moses is ascended into Heaven, with a life and soul of regenerated Faith, and left the law, &c. in and with Reason here below.

Moreover, the Kingdom of JESUS *was* and *is* of Faith, therefore he came on the *prophecy* of Faith in regeneration, (that stood before him and prophesied, when he was in the condition of the *Father*,) and he kept the *Law of Faith*, redeemed his Elect, and regenerated them to himself; for the nature of regeneration is to divide Faith from Reason, and the *Soul* from the *Body* of the Elect; for by regenerated Faith, Elect men are made *anew*, and it become their life and soul for salvation, and for CHRIST; *therefore* the Reason in *Moses*, and the *Law*, with all its consequence that he gave forth to Reason is but the *BODY* of *Moses*, and it belong to Reason which is the *Devil*: But his *Soul* which is regenerated Faith, with which he ascended into Heaven, that belong to JESUS, and it is even so with all
the

the Elect ! but do you *understand*, while you have Reason in you, you must be subject to its *Law*, &c. although but the *Body* of Moses : THEREFORE this was the *dispute or contention* ; the Devil for the *Body of Moses*, which is the *Kingdom of Reason*, and CHRIST for his own *Kingdom*, which is Faith in redemption and regeneration ; neither must he hearken to the *Devil* or take his kingdom ; and when the devil came again after he first tempted him, then he brought *railing accusations, persecutions, &c.* even unto death ; but CHRIST *overcome*, and the VICTORY is his own ! and the *Kingdom of Faith* is his own ! and he is *faithful and true* ! Yea, he brought in eternity ! and he has left the *Body of Moses buried* in the Seed of Reason : and this is the *Cherubim and flaming sword*, or the *internal Angel* in justice, is the *internal Moses* to whom the Seed of Reason, i. e. the *devil* is left, and as so they bear their own witness to their own condemnation.

Further, (Rev. xii.) “ and there was war in Heaven, “ Michael and his angels, fought against the dragon, and “ the dragon fought and his angels.” This *Michael* is Christ, who is the royal *Angel*, and KING of Faith ; and his *angels* are the Elect, who work the works of Faith, and *follow him* ; and this *Heaven* is the nether *Heaven* of Faith, which is the royal priesthood and compact of Faith, where *Christ stood* to work the works of redemption ; and when Faith is rose from death to life, in the Elect, *there*, they are *taken*, and did and do work the works of Faith in and for regeneration, and *follow Christ* ; AND the *Dragon* is the spirit of Reason which fell from Heaven in the serpent Angel, and was afterward born Cain in generation, from whence has proceeded a great and mighty Generation, and *many* has become kings of the dark spirit to *war against* God and Christ ; and when Christ was here one or more that had power began to persecute Christ and his saints ; and those of the same spirit which are his *Angels* assisted in the *War and persecution*, and continue to this day to the utmost

utmost of their power; nay the spirit of Reason in the Elect will *war against* the spirit of Faith in them: But CHRIST *has overcome the dragon and his angels*, and the Elect by his divine assistance has and will *overcome* them; and *no place* in Heaven can be *found* for the *dragon and his angels*; and they are also *cast* from the nether *Heaven* of Faith, which is the priesthood of Christ, because incapable of regeneration, for which they are angry, and will *war and blaspheme* against Christ and his kingdom; ver. 9. "and the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent called the devil; and Satan which deceiveth the whole world, he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." HERE, you may see who and what was *cast out of Heaven*, and the same tempted Christ and his brethren the Elect, and the same *war against them*, and it may well be said he *deceiveth* the whole world, for the *whole world* is gone after him, and worship him, i. e. they worship the *Spirit* of Reason and its *Imagination*, which is the *beast and its image*, and set a great value on themselves, and are of great consequence to themselves, and enter into contract with each other, and eager to fulfil that contract, to have each others commendation: *Therefore* when a Messenger of Christ come and offer regeneration and salvation, Him, they cannot take or endure, and so full of business, contracts, and engagement, that the Messenger is put off with excuses, and they are well content, and seek refuge one of another, so had rather not be *tormented*: BUT, at the voice of the Messenger, some will be *tormented*, and come forth in wrath, anger, lies, &c. against him, and violently accuse him with blasphemy against God, call him a devil, and curse him and the Elect his brethren, as devils to eternity; now this *Spirit* which is the *Dragon and old serpent*, is the *Accuser* of the Elect that follow Christ; but Christ and his Elect, has, and will *overcome the dragon and his angels*; "For the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accuseth them before our God day and night." *Because* the Dragon is so very

very earnest to keep his own kingdom and power, that they bring violent accusations, lies, persecutions, &c. against the kingdom of Christ, it being in their judgment against God, and would tempt God to own their acts, and think they do God service! Thus they *accuse* the Elect of God who work the works of Faith and worship God; and at the same time, themselves, worship *the image of the beast* which is the *Devil*, under the name of *god*; and in this they are bound up, in such eager emulation as to *sacrifice themselves*; for they are cast out from the nether Heaven of Faith, and must enter the first death both body and soul, and the internal Angel in justice, opens his book of justice and death; then, they find this *Dragon and old serpent* called the devil has *deceived* them: Thus fall their great anxiety, labour, and consequence, that in *one hour* it all come to *desolation* with themselves.

AGAIN (Jude) "and the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day." *This*, is the Cherubim, or *serpent* Angel, which fell from Heaven to this earth, and into generation; and in, and by generation, has come forth *many*; and the *Apostle* declared their acts, and manner of acting: Now of those that *Jude* write *many* had transformed themselves into the *apostolical letter* or declaration, and there cultivate their own lasciviousness, and brought in railing, exceptions, sporting on people, and give themselves up to wild libertinism, excuse, &c. which is all of the *devil*; so did, and do, transform themselves to the letter or declaration of JESUS, and think to get clear from *Moses*: NOW the bare letter of Jesus, is but a fragment or garment, what the spirit has left behind; and by its seeming scope, one will have it one way, and one another, &c. so they *divide his garments*, and cast lots for his *Vesture*, i. e. who shall be made *whole* by the Letter, which is but a *Garment*; so there will be a great difference found between *touching his garment*,

ment, and *eating his flesh and drinking his blood*: Therefore *Moses* is the great Prophet to the Seed of Reason, and is *buried* in their souls; and *JESUS* is the great Prophet to his Elect, and they are regenerated to him.

C H A P. XXIV.

OF *Immortality and Life, and Mortality and Death*: Now as I have abundantly declared, the created life of Adam and Eve was Faith, which is the divine nature of God; and God said to Faith, which he had created, "The very day thou eatest of the fruit that I forbid thee, thou shalt surely die," therefore when they hearkened to the serpent Angel, which is the Devil and tempter, and *eat* of his diabolical wisdom and nature, Faith broke its own law and *died*: For although their created life was *Faith*; which flowed forth as a crystal light burning with ease and divine satisfaction, as love, concord, union, joy, innocence, patience, meekness, harmless, righteousness, wisdom, and truth, that at the first sight of different creatures, immediately gave them names according to their form and nature; and at the sight of different creatures and things, caused its life to flow forth with new wisdom, joy, communion with, and praises unto his LORD GOD, for his marvellous works of creation; and was of divine satisfaction, qualification, heavenly harmony, virtue, &c. like unto God, but as a Son which was joined to this earth, in and by creation: Then, when they hearkened to the devil, and *eat* of his fruit, they broke the Law of Faith; then all those created virtues, properties, qualifications, &c. which was of Faith, become inactive and dead in the soul; and Reason with its law, justice, &c. took possession and ruled them; and they were filled with horrid fear, shame, and excuses to get away if possible; for then the justice of the Father, (which is justice

tice to Faith,) took place, and created Faith became disunited from its living creator and Father, in, and by death through his justice; and never more could flow, or act in the soul of any created or *generated* being, in the manner or condition it was created, to this day; then all things was made and became *anew in the Kingdom of Faith* for the salvation of Elect man.

Hence, as Faith fell in *Adam* and Reason in the cherubical *Angel*; and fallen Reason was the devil or *serpent* that tempted Adam; then Faith *died* according to the word of the LORD God for breaking its law: Thus God became the God of *Justice* through Man and Angel each breaking their own law; but *Faith* became so involved in justice and death, that *Reason* took possession and ruled the Man; because Reason was suffered to take this world by *violence*, and permitted to enjoy it as his kingdom for a *season*; yet under the power of justice and *death* for breaking his own law; thus are the *two* natures or kingdoms brought on by generation: NOW *Light, Life, and immortality* is of, and to that *nature*, that God was capable to take on HIM that he might redeem, and that was his own *nature* which was Faith he created in Adam: For God was *incapable* to take the nature of Reason, which was the Devil's nature, on him; if so, God and Devil would have been one, nay, HE would have been lost in his own works, by their being swallowed up in confusion; *this* is what the Devil would have, and contends for, but he never can take the *Kingdom of CHRIST* by *violence* as he was *suffered* to take this world.

Moreover, "when God walked in the Garden " in the *cool* of the day," and *called to Adam*, He raised Faith to a new life for regeneration, and promised himself would become a son to his own *power* of justice, and redeem him: Also let him know the *Curse* and condition of the serpent; and the *enmity* put between the *serpent's seed*, and the *seed of the woman*, which was and is the seed of Faith; for although she bore *Cain* through

through the incarnation of the *Devil*, and by that she was the *Mother of all living*, yet she was created with a life of Faith, and the Elect are called the *Seed of the Woman, Sons of Adam, Children of God, &c.*

AGAIN, this *garden of Eden that God walked in*, is the *GARDEN of FAITH* for regeneration: There is also a *garden of Eden*, which relate to the purity of God's creation, by which man may enjoy this life, for in this garden grow, and is gathered, all the corn, fruits, herbs, plants, cattle, beast, fowl, fish, water, &c. to nourish and support the life of man; and fine shrubs, trees, ivory, wood, and bone; fine spices, gums, &c. and fine colours, silks, cottons, linens, and wools; gold, silver, and other metals; diamonds, and all other fine stones; fine pearls, earth, springs, minerals, &c. And the *Life of Man* will go out with delight on those things, and is given for the use of Man; and may convert it to want form or condition he can, for his own nourishment, use, and delight; and all the different verdure, seeds, and roots, with their various use and beauty; and all the different Flowers, for their respective use, and various beauties to refresh and delight the *Life of Man*: Yea, this *Garden* flow with bounty and plenty by the pure *Act* of God's creation, and given man, to nourish and delight his life: Now men walk in this *Garden*, because it is the garden or *Field* for generation, in which men have their delight and care; into this *Garden* went the great *River which parted and became into four heads*, which was and is to water the soul of man.

Also, there is another *Eden*, which relate to the purity of God's creating the cherubim; and this *Garden* on the one part relate to *justice*; for although the *Cherubim* broke the Law, he was created under, and became the *tree of knowledge* of good and evil, after he was created pure, yet never could break that pure *justice*, so when Reason came to manhood, then this pure *justice* take place in the soul, which is the internal *angel*, or *Cherubims and flaming sword*: Now in the soul or on the *Life of Reason*,

is the *Garden* where this Angel walk in the power of God : Also in this *Garden WAS* and *IS* the cherubical inspiration, and that given priesthood of Reason ; so Moses also walked in this *Garden* on the life of Reason ; and the other *Garden* prospered according to their obedience or disobedience to the man Moses ; but the *cherubims* and *flaming sword* walk there at this day : Also there is one that ride the *black horse*, which is *Truth* in or of the law of Reason, that ride on the *dark spirit* of Reason, and on its *black acts*, which is the *black horse*, that when Reason is about to do evil, this rider will tell him that it is wrong, and he must not, then if he do it, this rider report him, unto him that ride the red horse, which is the *Angel* in justice, and he seal him under justice for calamities and death : so I would have men be careful, and hearken to this rider, lest they fall into trouble under judgment ; for *he carry a pair of balances in his hand, and it is a measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny, and see you hurt not the wine and oil* (Rev. 6.) i. e. love your neighbour, and not keep back from the poor ; for it is the fruit of the other *Eden's Garden*, which God appointed to support man, and peculiar those who **WORSHIP HIM**.

Further, the other part of this *Garden* is, that God raise and gather his kingdom of cherubims ; for the Child of Reason that die in minority, the angel in justice do not take place in the soul, and as so, are not charged with the law ; so the footing on which Reason stand is *split* asunder ; for them that live to manhood, the *Angel* take place in the soul, and must go their way according to infinite justice, and them that die in childhood, are taken according to the purity and glory, GOD created the cherubim, to compose the glorious order of cherubims in Heaven above ; for which the Child of Reason dying in minority, and natural idiot, which is the same thing in consequence, will be raised to glory ! Thus you may see who, and what, walk or ride, in those two *Eden Gardens* : But as the paradise of created

ated Faith was lost, through created Faith breaking its own Law, and all things is made anew for the salvation of Elect man, then as I said, the *Garden of Eden* that God walk in, is the GARDEN of FAITH in and for regeneration, because his holy spirit goeth out on his Elect, in MERCY, REDEMPTION and REGENERATION; and in the *midst of this Garden* stand Christ in Mercy, and regeneration for glory, who is the TREE OF LIFE, and *immortality*; and from out of this *garden was drove the man*, i. e. the man of Reason, and "cherubims and a flaming sword placed, which turns every way to keep the *Way of the tree of life*, lest he take also and eat, and live for ever;" thus in the beginning was fixed *immortality and life and mortality and death*.

Yea, the *Garden that GOD walk or ride in*, is the GARDEN of FAITH in and for regeneration; therefore when Faith was rose from death to life, and taken into the royal compact and priesthood of *lively Faith*, in and for regeneration, and this new life WAS and IS the *Virgin daughter* of Faith, and to her was and is given the promise of *Christ to come*, and power to work the works of Faith under the *justice* of the Father, and the spirit of prophecy of her own salvation; in this *they walked with God*, in the royal compact and GARDEN OF FAITH in regeneration, see (Rev. 6.) when *the first seal was opened*, "and I saw and behold a white horse, and he that sat on him had a Bow, and a Crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering and to conquer," this was Christ, or God promised in Christ, and the *white horse* is his own power and righteousness of Faith, for he never broke that Law; and is *faithful and true*, and wear the righteous *Crown* of Faith; and HE has *conquered* sin, death, hell, and justice! And HE goeth out on the *Virgin daughter* of Faith in and for regeneration, for whom he has *conquered*, and also assists to *conquer*, and by the grand Union with God and Christ in regeneration, come through *great tribulation faithful and true*, and is united to GOD for CHRIST: Also Enoch *walked with God* in the royal compact

compact of Faith, which is the *Garden* for regeneration, *and he was not for God took him*; for Faith being *risen* from death to life, and by divine assistance can work the works, pass through *death*, and quicken or be quickened again, because it is of an *immortal* nature, and can be worked through *mortality and death*; to *immortality and life*: So by this spirit of regenerated Faith, man may be *translated* into Heaven; so Enoch *was not* left here, but by virtue of the the spirit of regenerated Faith *God took him* into the kingdom of *immortality and life*, and was united to God for Christ in the royal compact of regeneration: ALSO Moses and Elias *walked* with God, and was in the same manner *taken* or translated into Heaven; for when Faith is risen from death to life, by regeneration, it become the soul of Elect man for salvation, and with this *life* Enoch, Moses, and Elias, was taken into Heaven, and Reason was *cast out*, and went to its own center and home, by *Death*, &c. being conquered; thus you may see this spirit is of an *immortal* nature, as by it men are brought through the mighty powers of *death*, hell, &c. to *Life and immortality*, and then it is at its own center or home; and this spirit is of so powerful ascending nature, that it will take the *person* also, if God please to assist, as it did Enoch, Moses, and Elias, who were united to God for Christ in the holy, and immortal compact of Faith, in and for *Regeneration*.

Again, as Enoch, Moses, and Elias was translated into Heaven by virtue of regeneration, and then united to God for Christ by this *immortal* Spirit of regenerated Faith, and there sit in the glory of the Father, in *life and immortality*, that the royal, merciful, and glorious united compact of Faith, may be compleated, by redemption and regeneration; therefore as they bore a body of flesh, and had the *first resurrection*, and was regenerated, and ascended into *Heaven*, with a life of regenerated Faith; *they* was very capable to sit in the glory of the *Father*, while He became a SON to his own Power, redeem and gain, a new kingdom, which is the glory of
Mercy!

Mercy! Therefore all the Elect of *old*, and time of the law, Faith in them was risen from *death to life*, and taken into the ROYAL PRIESTHOOD where they *walked with God*, and had the promise of Christ, and spirit of prophecy, and did prophecy of Christ to come; and in this way were they brought through the powers of Reason, &c. by regeneration, till the hour of death; then this incense, prayer, prophecy, or spirit of regenerated Faith, went through death, and was called into Heaven, and united to God for Christ, even as Enoch, Moses, and Elias were, only they was *person* and *spirit*, but the other Elect by this *immortal Spirit* of regenerated Faith, and then died or fell asleep in the bed of mercy; but it is all in the lively compact of regenerated Faith, which centers to, and is recorded in *immortality and Life*, and not in *mortality and death*: Thus, in and with the Elect of old, and in the time of the law, was the *Way of CHRIST prepared*, and the fruits for his kingdom, centers to his kingdom, which is *Life and Immortality*.

Further on this first resurrection, prophecy, prayer, and incense of the Elect of old, (His witness of His spirit that stood before the *Throne* and prophesied when he WAS in the condition of the *Father*, which ascended into Heaven and is recorded in the *immortal* compact of regeneration, which is the BOOK OF LIFE! GOD became CHRIST to complete this *immortal* compact! declared his holy gospel, and regeneration; redeemed his Elect, and brought *life and immortality* to Light! And when he ascended into his own royal kingdom of *divine Mercy*, HE had gained, he took possession of his kingdom of regenerated Faith in *life and immortality*; See Rev. xiv. "and I looked, and lo, a lamb stood on Mount Sion, "and with him an hundred and forty-four thousand, "having his Father's name written in their forehead." *This*, was the spirits of Faith, of them that was regenerated from the earth, and united to God for Christ, and were in the *immortal* Records of regenerated Faith, in
Life

Life and Immortality.—John saw them in *vision*, and so have I on this high Mountain of regenerated Faith, which spiritually is *Mount Sion*; and Christ took possession of this his Kingdom, for they *stood before him and prophesied* when he was in the condition of the *Father*, and as so *have his Father's name written in their forehead*: Ver. 2. “ And I heard a voice from Heaven as the voice “ of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder; “ and I heard the voice of harpers, harping with their “ harps !” This was the utterance and rejoicings of Faith, because Christ had overcome the devil, and the powers of sin, death, hell, and justice, and took possession of his kingdom of *Virgins of Faith* in and by regeneration, which filled the *Heaven of Faith*, with great utterance, joy, and rejoicing in the concord of regenerated Faith, in *life and immortality*: “ And they sang as it were a new “ song before the throne, and before the four beasts, “ and the elders; and no man could learn that song but “ the hundred and forty and four thousand which were “ redeemed from the Earth.” This *new song*, was, that Christ had *overcome* and took *possession* of his Kingdom the glory of mercy, and regenerated Faith in *immortality and life*: The other *song* was of prophecy, and union to God for Christ, which is the song of *Moses*; but now Christ has took possession of his kingdom of *Virgins* and united himself to them in *immortality and life*, which is the Song of the LAMB: For this, *understand*, the *Union* of regenerated Faith is so great, that when Christ gained his kingdom, the *natures Voice* of regenerated Faith, of each individual in the *Book of LIFE* have joy, and rejoice, in the true concord and harmony of united Faith, like unto a well tuned harpsichord, in the joyful utterance of the thanksgiving in praise of divine wisdom, power, honour, glory, &c. unto the LORD GOD of Faith and mercy, their king, and redeemer, who will live and reign, in the merciful and glorious united *immortal* kingdom of regenerated Faith for ever! Yea the *natures voice* of every *individual* have its utterance, which make the glorious

rious Heaven of regenerated Faith, sound aloud in rejoicing and thanksgiving.

AGAIN, you may see, *no man could learn that song* but those that were *redeemed from the earth*; and it was *sung before the THRONE, and before the four BEASTS* and the *ELDERS*; as to the four Beasts, *Enoch* is one, *Moses* one, *Elias* one; the other *JESUS*, who hath the *face* of a man, because he hath passed through *ALL* and from *ALL* to his high kingdom the *Glory of Mercy*; the other *three* sit in the glory of justice, but more of this anon: *AS* to the *Elders*, the *LORD GOD OF HEAVEN* is an *Elder*, because he created all things, and is the *Foundation* of Faith, *Adam* also and *Enoch*, *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob*, *Moses* and *Elias*, and others are *Elders*, because this is his first *witness* of his spirit, and that which *stood before him and prophecied* when *HE* was in the condition of the *Father*: They are called *Elders*, because God's *communion* with, and *promise* of eternal life to *them*, is left on *RECORD*; also *Christ* is *recorded*, the *Son of David*, of *Abraham*, and of *Adam*, in the *genealogy* of Faith, because the union is so great; for this *understand* *HE* came by way of the *Elder* or the *Father* to inherit the *Son and Brother*; so, you may see "they were not defiled with women for "they were *Virgins*;" i. e. as I said, this *Virgin* will not hearken to, or have to do with *Reason*; so men in regeneration must put away their wife *Reason*; *ALSO*, this *Virgin* did not bear a *Son* in regeneration to *Christ*, untill *God become Christ*; also you may see "they were "redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto "God, and to the *Lamb*," therefore this song of Faith in regeneration was *sung in immortality* because *Christ* had worked the redemption, overcome, took possession of, and united himself to those *Virgins*, who was regenerated and *redeemed from the earth*; and crowned their Faith, *Prophecy, and Union*; and *HIM only* was found able and worthy to do that; for which they *offered* at, and cast
C c their

their *Crowns* before HIS *Throne*; and this caused great utterance and rejoicings in the *immortal* Kingdom of regenerated *Faith*.

C H A P. XXV.

BY what is written, you may see how the WAY of Christ was *prepared* in the *days of old*, when *He* was in the condition of the *Father*; How his Kingdom was *gathered*; How he *united* himself to them; and how they stand *recorded* in the Book of *Life and immortality*, therefore *CHRIST came*, to crown their *Faith and prophecy*, and work *Life* out of *Death*; for as *Faith* fell in Adam and became inactive and dead, and Reason took possession and ruled the *man and woman*, and so it go on in *generation*; then *CHRIST* raise *Faith* from death to a *new life* (in Elect man), and then *HE* has got the *victory over the Beast*, which is the *Spirit* of Reason; because this *Life* of *Faith* is far above, and contrary to that of Reason, for it is taken into the royal Compact and Priesthood of *Faith*, to be regenerated to *CHRIST*, and it is only subject to *God and Christ*; i. e. to work the works of *Faith*, under the justice of the Father, and to *follow Christ* through death and hell, to his royal Kingdom of *divine Mercy*; for Christ rule over it, and him it will *follow*, it being regenerated to him, that by regeneration it become the soul of the Elect for salvation, and is of an *immortal nature*: THEREFORE (Mat. x.) Christ said to *his disciples* "and fear not them which kill the " body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather " fear him that is able to destroy both soul and body in " hell;" Now, here you may see the difference between *generation* and *regeneration*, and of *immortality and Life* and *mortality and death*; for if a man is incapable of regeneration he is *dead* in the sight of God, and his soul

is

is *mortal* and must *die* ; as in this case the soul and body is inseparable, and both together must enter the *first death*, and then to go into the *second death*, then both *soul and body is destroyed in hell* ; so mighty, and so great is the power of the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN : But by this *new life* which Christ raiseth from the death of Faith which fell in Adam, Christ worketh on it, for regeneration and salvation ; and by divine assistance, it is brought through the powers of Reason ; and the justice of the Father, and it grow strong, and become the soul of Elect man for salvation ; it ascends to Christ, is united to him, and recorded by him, in his *immortal* record of divine Mercy, which is the BOOK OF LIFE ; then is *Life and immortality brought to Light*, to the Elect ! So no one can *kill that soul* because it belong to Christ, nor *pluck it out of his hand*, because it is united to him in *immortality* : Now, this is, and will be the condition of the Elect, for Christ came to *redeem*, and *work life* out of death, and by regeneration *gather* Faith to his Kingdom, and bring *life and immortality* to his Elect.

Moreover, the *first resurrection*, that he who hath *part therein*, the *second death* hath no power over, Why ? because he is and will be passed from death to *Life* by regeneration, as John v. 24. “ Verily, verily, I say unto “ you, he that heareth my word, and believeth on him “ that sent me, hath everlasting *Life*, and shall not “ come into condemnation, but is passed from death to “ *Life*,” Why ? because he is raised from death to *Life* in the *first resurrection* ; and by regeneration he is passed through the powers of Reason, and of Sin, Death, and Hell ; and from those powers to Christ in *Immortality* : AGAIN (John’s Gospel 11th.) *Jesus said unto her*, “ I “ am the resurrection and the *Life*, he that believeth in “ me though he were dead, yet shall he *live*,” i. e. He that *knows* the Voice of Jesus when he hear it, and come to believe in HIM by the true spirit and prayer of obedience, though he was dead in Faith, yet Jesus will *raise* that Faith into active *Life*, and it shall *live* and

work in regeneration: " And whosoever liveth and be-
 " liveth in me shall never die;" i. e. Faith when *risen*
 from death to *Life*, it *live* in and for regeneration, and
believe and work the works of Faith in that royal priest-
 hood, and its fruits, incense, prayer, or *breath*, and
 spirit ascend to Christ, and is united to him in *immorta-*
lity, and do not *Die*, because it *live in*, and with him;
 ALSO Luke xii. " And I say unto you *my friends*, be
 " not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have
 " no more that they can do," Why? because this spirit
 of regenerated Faith become the soul of Elect man for sal-
 vation, and it belong to Christ and by HIM *is* and *will*
be brought through all the powers of Reason, and of sin,
 death, and hell; and from all those, for no one can stop
 it by *death*, nor *pluck it out of HIS Hand*, because it is
 united to him in *immortality*, as an *earnest* of eternal
 glory.

• AGAIN, as Adam was created out of the dust of the
 earth, and the nature that animated him was *immortal*,
 while it stood in obedience to its *Father and Creator*; but
 when it broke its own law it died, and Reason took
possession, *ruled* and *drove* them; then they must lose
 that *Life* also, and become putrefaction, and go to earth
 from whence they were taken; and this is its *lost* con-
 dition, without regeneration; then, in steps the LORD
 GOD of Heaven, who is CHRIST the Redeemer, and
 raise Faith to *active Life*: Now as Faith was of an
immortal nature before it broke its own law, and for
 that became *mortal* and died; then when it rose from
 that *death* to a new *LIFE*, that new *Life* is also of an *im-*
mortal nature; having passed through the first death to
 a *new Life* for regeneration, to Christ in *Immortality*:
 For *mortality and death* cannot pass through mortality and
 death, neither can *corruption and death*, pass through
 death and corruption, nor can *Justice and death* pass
 through Justice and death; therefore its that which is of
 an *immortal* nature, that *Death* cannot keep under his

his power, to pass through those great and mighty powers.

JESUS said, (John's Gospel 6.) "It is the spirit that *quickeneth* the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that "I speak unto you they are *spirit*, and they are *Life*," i. e. Jesus whose words are *spirit and Life*, raise Faith to *active Life*; for the power of his word, or his *natures Voice* and divine assistance center into the womb of Faith, in the Elect, which is the *good ground*, and quicken Faith, or give birth to the *Virgin*, from its womb or seed; and this *quickeneth* spirit is of an *immortal* nature; and is what *quicken* and actuate the Elect in regeneration, and with divine assistance will come through the powers of *Justice and Death*; but, *the flesh profiteth nothing*; for at the voice of the *third angel* in regeneration (Rev. viii.) "and the *third Angel* sounded, and there fell a great "Star from Heaven burning as it were a lamp, and it "fell upon the *third part* of the rivers, and fountains of "waters," this *great Star* is God's Justice that *fell from Heaven*, through the fall of Man and Angel; and it *burn* like a clear *lamp* to enlighten the earthy heart of man; and rule over him bright and clear; the *rivers it fell upon*, is the Life and acts of man; and the *fountains of waters*, is that man enjoy the waters of (this) *Life*, under the powers of *Justice and Death*: "And the name of the "Star is called *Wormwood*, and the *third part* of the "waters become *wormwood*, and many men died of those "waters, because they were made bitter." This *Star* may well be called *wormwood*, and that it made the *waters wormwood*, and that *many men died of those waters*, because by those *waters* men are swallowed up in justice and death; for except a man can drink of those *waters*, and *overcome*, he must die of those *waters*, therefore the *Life of man is made bitter*: Those that *died*, was and is, the Seed and Spirit of Reason, because they *die of those waters* of Justice, for they cannot *drink and overcome*; therefore Death and Justice cannot be brought through *Death and Justice*, (for that is the grand united center,

to

to swallow up, and there keep in the *second* death and darkness,) but it is by this *new life* which is of an *immortal* nature, that can work the works of Faith, and against those powers; and it is by this new Life and divine assistance that the Elect are brought through the powers of *Reason, Justice, and Death*, and can drink those *waters*, which is a *deadly thing* and overcome, and are *found worthy*; and to them is given the TESTIMONY OF JESUS which is the spirit of prophecy of *Christ to come*, then at the hour of death they are called up to the *Justice* of the Father, which is the *Voice* of the *sixth* ANGEL in regeneration, and you cannot go back, for then is the powers of Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice let loose and ready to *devour*, and no help to be found, for through the *Justice of the Father* you must go, or no Life eternal; and the divine incomes and the Spirit of prophecy that was so sweet is turned into *blood*.

AT this time is the *the third part of the Sun and Moon smitten* and darkened, or *Moon* which is the *spirit of prophecy* under the justice of the Father *turned into blood*; and the *Sun* may well be said to be *darkened*, for you must go through the Justice of the Father to his *Mercy*; and the *Moon* which is the *Justice* of the Father, may well be *darkened*, because Faith must lose itself in *death*, under that Justice to pass through it, to the mercy of the SON: And the nether *Heaven* of Faith as it were *departed*; and nature's *Heaven* of this life *rolled together* and gone, and *no more refuge found*! then this *Virgin* daughter of Faith, which is of an *immortal* nature is *only* capable to pass through those powers: NOW this *part of the Sun and Moon*, that is not *darkened* is the power of Christ to assist the spirit of Faith to *follow him*; for this Spirit is the *third part* which is God's *part* of Elect man, the which is worked on for regeneration, and assisted not only to pass *through* those powers, but *from* those powers, because *death* cannot stop it, for it will *follow* Christ, but the *flesh profiteth nothing*: For this *Life* of Faith must be lost in death in its own blood as Christ
lost

lost his; and there it meet Christ in *spirit* as he was *crucified*: Here is the *Son* smitten by the power of death, and Faith is united to him: *Now* this is the marriage with the *Lamb*, and this *Spirit* is commended into the *hands of the Father*, which is of justice, and there dies as Christ himself did; then it is quickened or quicken from this death, to a *new Life* again, and this new *Life* is the spiritual born *Son* to CHRIST in regeneration for his kingdom, *now* this *Spirit* of regenerated Faith which is of an *immortal* nature has passed through its *second death*, which hath *no power* on it, so as to keep it from following Christ, for to him is this *Spirit* to go, because this *Way* Christ went to his kingdom in spirit and person; and the Elect will *follow* by this *Spirit*: *AFTER* this, the spiritual born *Son* is called and ascend into an high *mountain* of Faith in regeneration where it see CHRIST in his high *Kingdom, Glory, and Power of Mercy*, and them that are *sealed*, and that all must be sealed in and by HIM to inherit his Kingdom; then, the *eager prayer* of this *spiritual born Son* is offered at the feet of JESUS in the *Glory of mercy*, (which is the *grand ALTAR of Faith*) to be called in and sealed by HIM in his *immortal* compact and kingdom of regenerated Faith; and when the voice say, "*come in hither*," the spirit go, and is united to Christ in *immortality*: *THIS* is the voice of the *seventh ANGEL* in regeneration, for then, "the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of Christ, who will reign for ever and ever," because this *Spirit* and *Fruits* of regenerated Faith is brought through all the powers of *Reason, Death, and Hell*, and from all those powers to the *Union, and Seal* of Christ in *Immortality* and glory, which is the *seal of the LIVING GOD* and the *Book of Life*, then the soul is assured of eternal Life; and the Man or Woman whose soul is so much *refined* by regeneration as to bring forth the aforesaid prayer, fruits or incense to ascend to Heaven, and be united to Christ in *Immortality*, dies or falls *asleep* in the bed of mercy for the resurrection to glory, which will be but as
a moment,

a *moment*, because time is done and over ; But this Spirit, incense, or *Life* of regenerated Faith after it has passed through all, and from all it cannot die, for it is united to Christ who is an *immortal Being* ; thus you may see by regeneration, how life and immortality is brought to light.

Again, as I said, the *Body* of Elect man is Reason, a filthy corrupted earthy matter, which took place through the fall, when Reason took possession of the man and woman ; therefore corrupted earthy matter will go to earth from whence it came, as the *Lord God* said to Adam, " For out of it was thou taken ; for dust thou art, and " unto dust shalt thou return," so Reason is *cast out* and go to its own center or home : Now this filthy corrupted earthy matter and Reason, which Elect man has in this life, is but their *body* (although eager to live,) and man may *kill* that, but are *not able to kill the soul*, because that belong to Christ, and is regenerated to him in *Immortality* ; and although the filthy part of Elect man go to *earth*, yet do you *understand*, there is that which is refined by regeneration, that lay sleeping in the Bed of mercy, like unto a *Womb or Tree* that has bore, or brought forth the fruits of Faith in regeneration unto Christ, that in the morning of the resurrection will receive it again of Christ by his great call and power, as its quickening and life, and come forth with a *glorious Body* of this earth, of flesh and bone, like unto Christ himself which they will inherit in all eternity.

Now, if a man come to the *bloody unbelieving World* he come to *mortality and death*, because Reason is incapable of regeneration ; there then soul and body are inseparable, both must die together the *first death* under the Angel in justice, and both go together into the *second death* : Also man may talk of, and *preach* concerning Faith, yet without the *first resurrection* he is preaching of, or to a dead Faith ; and at this time or condition, even the Elect are not only in a *mortal*, but a *corruptable* state for both *soul and body* to die together ; but when Christ come

come He raise Faith from Death to life for regeneration; and to that soul bring *life and immortality to light*: So I would have you know and observe when the spirit speak concerning Faith, or Reason, and concerning *immortality and life* or *mortality and death*, and of what is capable to pass through *death*, and what *Death* can keep under; as Isa. liii. "Because he hath poured out his soul unto *death*," This is of Christ whose Life or Soul *died*, but death could not keep him under his power, for he passed through it, and this Spirit of regenerated Faith will *follow*, because it is the *Soul* of the Elect for salvation; and by the great union of Faith in compact, and divine assistance, will pass through *death and Hell* (Psal. xvi.) "For thou wilt not leave my *soul in hell*, neither wilt thou suffer thine *holy One* to see corruption." Here *David* knew by his testimony from Heaven, that his *soul* of regenerated Faith would pass through *death and Hell*, and be united to God for Christ, in the *immortal* compact of regenerated Faith; and that God would become Christ, *redeem* his Elect, *pass* through those powers, both in *person and spirit* (or *body and soul*), *gain* all power to himself, and take *possession* of his immortal kingdom of regenerated Faith, which is the souls of his *Elect*.

AGAIN, As Jesus kept the law of Faith, redeemed his Elect, and passed through the powers of Reason, and left it behind under judgment, yea through the powers of *Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice*, both in person and spirit, and so ascended into his high Kingdom the glory of *Mercy*, and was and is the first fruits unto and into his said kingdom, and there took possession of the *Spirits* of regenerated Faith, which is the souls of his Elect, that stood before him and prophecied, when he was in the condition of the Father, for which there was such joy, rejoicing and thanksgiving before his *throne*, for there the nature's voice of every individual of regenerated Faith have its utterance because HE had gained all *Power* to himself, for HE had passed through *All* and from *All* to his Kingdom, the Power and Glóry of *Mercy*;

for *HIM* only was worthy, and they cast their *Crowns*, which was their *Lives* of redeemed and regenerated Faith before his *Throne*, and HE only, was able to receive it, for HE only is able and worthy to make them *compleat*, and like unto himself by a glorious resurrection, for and into his high Heaven the glory of mercy.

Moreover, as CHRIST passed through those mighty powers, both in person and spirit, and from those powers to his glory of mercy; and is the royal BRIDEGROOM to the Virgin daughter of Faith, so regeneration is worked by him, and to him; and this spirit of regenerated Faith is of his own nature, which is a quickening spirit, and of an *immortal* nature, and it will *follow Christ* through the powers of Reason, Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice, for this way HE went both in person and spirit, to his *kingdom* of mercy; and this spirit *will* follow him, for thither is this spirit to go: Yea when this spiritual *Son* in regeneration is born of the *Virgin* daughter of Faith, *he* is taken into an high *Mountain* in regeneration where he *see* Christ in his glory of Mercy, and them that are sealed, and that all by him must be sealed; then this spiritual born *Son* offer itself up at the royal feet of JESUS, in his glory of mercy, which is the *grand ALTER* of Faith; in this Manner is Faith regenerated and offered to him, and is his other WITNESS OF HIS SPIRIT or OLIVE TREE *that stand before him and prophecy* now he is in the condition of the SON, and in the glory of mercy; and this *spiritual born Son* is immortal, and on this great MOUNTAIN of *regenerated Faith*, offers at his ROYAL FEET to be called in and united to him in his *immortal* and glorious State; yea Christ call it in, and unite it to himself in his high State of IMMORTALITY! So all the *life* and *fruits* of regenerated Faith which is the Lives and Crowns of the Elect, is cast and offered at the feet of JESUS in his *immortal* glory of Mercy; now this is the great and grand Altar and *offering* of Faith for HE only is worthy
to

to receive it, and able to make it compleat, and he do receive it and unite it to himself in *immortality*! ALSO when this *spiritual born Son* is called in and united to Christ it is the voice of the *seventh Angel in regeneration*, then *the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of Christ*, because this spirit or life of regenerated Faith, of an *immortal* nature, has passed through all the powers of Reason, and of Sin, Death, Hell, and Justice, to the mercy and union of CHRIST; and at this great union of *Faith in Heaven*, there is always great utterance of joy and thanksgiving to the LORD CHRIST their king and redeemer; and as I said, the nature's voice of every individual has its utterance of joy and thanksgiving; for *the high immortal and glorious kingdom of regenerated Faith, where Christ is king, flow with the glorious spiritual fire of Faith, like unto a pure Fountain and rivers of refined gold, as is powered from the Refiners Test, in circulative active life, and is gathered in by regeneration, it being the Treasure of the Lord Christ; of which Christ the glorious fountain, is graciously pleased by influence to assist his Elect, to help the Virgin daughter of Faith to follow him through the mighty powers of Death, &c. and it ascend to him again in prayer, thanksgiving, &c.* And when the *spiritual Son* is born, it ascend and is united to Christ; therefore the Prayer, Works, Fruits, Incense, Crowns, and *Spirit and life of regenerated Faith*, which is the souls of his Elect, and is of an *immortal* nature, they all ascend to Christ, and offer, and is offered at his royal feet, and he call them in, and they are united to him, in his high *immortal and glorious kingdom of regenerated Faith*, and they are in HIM, with HIM, and of HIM, because the union is so great! Now this is the *seal of the living GOD!* the BOOK OF LIFE! and the NAME written therein! Then the person dies, or fall asleep in the bed of mercy for a *moment*, assured of eternal Life! Then, when *time* end, every Elect will receive his life again of CHRIST in a resurrection to eternal GLORY! For the Union of regenerated Faith is so mighty, and so great with CHRIST that by the ALMIGHTY POWER of his Call to every Elect as to

one man, *they* then, all receive their lives of Christ again, with a great and glorious advantage and advancement, quicken, and come forth in a glorious body of this earth in flesh and bone, and be compleated like unto Christ himself for his *glorious kingdom of mercy in all eternity* : And from the *Seal* of the living God to the *resurrection* is but as a *moment*, for when the soul is sealed, Time is done and over ; So BLESSED are them that can offer this life of regenerated Faith up to Christ, and there *lose* it in HIM, then they are sure to find it in the resurrection to eternal glory !

Again, as *written*, you may see the difference between *immortality and life*, and *mortality and death*, and between *generation and regeneration*, what it is for a man to *die* as he was born, and how it is to be *born again*, to be regenerated to CHRIST ; for if a man is incapable of regeneration then the *soul die with the body*, go to corruption under cherubical justice, and is cast *from Christ and his kingdom of regenerated Faith* : For *mortality and death*, cannot be united to, or have any union with *immortality and life* ; neither can the *Spirit* of corrupted *generation*, agree or unite with the *Spirit* of incorrupted *regeneration*, therefore every power has its *Action* as was ordained and permitted by the LORD GOD of HEAVEN ; and every Spirit and Power *will act* according to its nature, and incline to its own center and *Home* ; NOW if a man come from God under creation and justice, there the Soul is *mortal and die* ; and although Faith is *risen* in the man, and he *prophecy* of those things, he is taken and united to Christ in *immortality*, and leave the world without declaring regeneration, because he did not come out under that covenant : But him in whom the spiritual Son is born of the *Virgin daughter to Christ*, and taken into to the great MOUNTAIN of Faith in regeneration, where it see and and commune with Christ in his *immortality*, and sent immediately back by him, then, he come in the spirit and power of Christ in his high *immortal* compact of regeneration, then *he* will declare regeneration

generation, and *life and immortality to the Elect*, and this is his declaration, for he was shewed those things by the Angel of regenerated Faith, who is *CHRIST in immortality*, and sent back by him to declare it, and HE, and the whole Heaven of regenerated Faith bear him witness: So BLESSED are them that *understand*, enter in, and *follow*, for the BOOK OF LIFE is *open* to them! And although the powers of Reason, sin, death, hell, and justice, is hard and sharp to go through, yet the spirit of Faith, by prayer and divine assistance, will come through; and the *tribulation* though great, yet it continue but a small space, like unto a *woman in the travail of labour*, when the child tosses, throbs, and presses hard to be born, she hath sorrow, but when born, the anguish is forgot, for *joy* there is a man born: Even so, Faith presses for its own *Kingdom*; and when the spiritual son is born, and sealed, all *sorrow* is turned into *eternal joy*: So I pray for and recommend *Prayer*, and not to faint, the Union of the Elect, the assistance of Christ, *Amen.*

C H A P. XXVI.

WHEN Jesus said the *Temple* of Jerusalem should be thrown down, and *not one stone be left on another* (as Mat. xxiv.) *The Disciples came unto him privately*, saying, "Tell us when shall those things be, and what shall be the sign of thy *coming* and of the *end* of the world?" *This* looking for Christ to *come* has been in general his personal appearance, which, will surely come to pass, but this *understand*,—except he first *comes in spirit* to raise Faith from death to life, and seal the soul for the resurrection unto life eternal, his *coming* in person will be of no benefit, except to the Child or Ideot who will

will be raised cherubims: And *Jesus* answered, saying to them, "Take heed that no man deceive you; "for many shall come in my name saying, I am Christ "and shall deceive many." Now when *Jesus* was here, and declared who he was with his holy gospel, and called his disciples, and *many* of the Seed of Reason transformed themselves into the *Echo* of that call or declaration, then by the Spirit of emulation, become such high cherubims as to go forth and say "I am the man," or "have as much spiritual wisdom and power as *him*," and will preach and prophecy in the *Name* of *Jesus*, or any of his Messengers: Now, those was them, *Jesus* told *his disciples* to *beware of*, and *take heed* not to be deceived by them, but patiently *wait his coming* again, which he did in *Spirit* at the day of *Pentecost*: Moreover *Jesus* *prophecies of his coming and destruction of Jerusalem* to be near at one time, and truly it *was*, and *JS*, for when *Jesus* was here in person *Jerusalem* flourished in having power among themselves in their own law, and to worship their own way, which was the priesthood of Reason, so put *Jesus* to death, because he would not hearken to them, but he left *Jerusalem desolate* in their own way, for when he came again it was to his Elect, and took them into his own priesthood: Further, *Jerusalem* was the *City* that first flourished under the *public declaration* from Heaven, i. e. the *Law*, and the *Priesthood* that was given by *Moses*, which being given to Reason they could *couch* themselves under it, and say it come from God, though notwithstanding, they would act *in* it, or concerning it as *they* pleased: ALSO, let men profess what letter or declaration they will, *couch* themselves under it, and take it into the priesthood of Reason, they are in the same condition as was the *Jews of Jerusalem*; for except *JESUS* take the Man, *Moses* has already got him; and if men profess the *Name of Jesus*, and are in the priesthood of Reason, they will judge of it by the spirit of Reason, because they have no other wisdom, so determine it all in the wrong, which thing was done at *Jerusalem* concerning

cerning Christ: Therefore *Jerusalem* flourished in its *power* and *priesthood*, till Christ came in spirit to his Elect, then it was left *desolate and destroyed*; and it is the very same at this day, for men have the *Letter*, and take it into the *wild priesthood* of Reason as the *Jews* did, and there judge what is exceptable to God, and what is not, and this is as much the *city of Jerusalem* as the former was, for it is the *spirits* and *acts* of the people that compose this *City*, and this *Jerusalem* may flourish in the eyes of men till *Christ come*; then men will be disturbed in spirit, divide in anger, enter into a spiritual war, and lay wait to kill each other in the spiritual; for *many* will hold forth and say, "*I am of Christ*," and mine is the *Way* for salvation.

Further, when Christ *come in spirit* the voice of him through his Messenger centers to the womb of Faith, quickens it into life, and it is *taken* into the royal priesthood of Faith, then the *world* is in a manner ended to the Elect, why? as they are taken into a *new covenant* and priesthood to go into regeneration, and must seek a *new Kingdom* which is of Christ, then he will be with, and help them to overcome this world, even to the end of this life: Also when the soul is *taken* into the priesthood of Faith, the priesthood of Reason in him is *left* behind *desolate*, for he must not excuse himself in that priesthood, for that must be *destroyed* as the *temple and city of Jerusalem* was, and *not one stone be left on another*, i. e. all the wisdom of man, and excuses he has made to save himself, which, is the priesthood of Reason, must be *thrown down*, and not an excuse to be found on the *Wisdom* of Reason, which is the *Building* Reason made to dwell in, offer its own incense, flourish for *one day* and be destroyed in *one hour*!

AGAIN, when the soul is so far enlightened from Heaven to "*See the ABOMINATION of desolation*," spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy "*place, whoso readeth let him understand.*" He will soon *SEE the sign of the son of man in Heaven*; for this *ABOMINATION*

MINATION is when the Seed and spirit of Reason is transformed into the outward *Word*, (which is the echo of the true declaration and prophecy,) and become such high Cherubims, as to go forth, and usurp the rule and power of the Letter, preach and prophecy in the name of JESUS, judge what is of God, and what is not, and would put the Spirit of Christ to death, and all from the spirit of Reason; then excuse themselves in their own *wild priesthood*, and call it, "the *Church* of Christ," which is *abomination*: Therefore *ABOMINATION standeth in the holy place*, or under the *holy NAME* where it ought not, and the SPIRIT of Christ made *desolate*: Now when man see this, he will also see that the spirit of Reason has *ruled* over him, and the spirit of Christ has been *desolate* in him, notwithstanding he has professed the Letter with great Zeal, but it has been in the *wild* priesthood of Reason; and he has offered the *incense* of wild Reason in the *name of JESUS*, which is the *Seat of abomination* in him, and he will find himself *desolate*; therefore will *flee from Juda and Jerusalem*, i. e. from the kingship and priesthood of Reason, into the *Priesthood* of Faith, that Christ should rule over them, for this is the *Mountains* that the Elect are commanded to *flee into*, that they be safe from being *destroyed with Jerusalem*, which is the *seat* and power of the priesthood of Reason.

Moreover, when those things come to pass in the soul of man, he may look for CHRIST, it being a *Sign of his coming*; then the mighty *works* of Faith, and *sorrow* will begin with him, for he must bear temptation, and anger from his enemies; His own *house will be divided* against him, and seek to overthrow him, by tempting or driving him from Christ, and his own spirit of Reason will threaten him with distress, poverty, and shame, (in the eyes of men) on the one part, and promise him great happiness on the other, if he will but hearken to him: But this must *not* be done, and the temptation *bore* with; and man will find to *bear* this temptation, he will
eat

eat his own flesh in *sorrow*, yet by prayer and divine assistance from *Heaven* he will *overcome*: Also the spirit of Reason will be in great trouble, as if his waters of life was stoped, so in great agitation, and know not how to help himself, but will follow his own wisdom, and be left *desolate* in it; and *love will wax cold* among many to the Messenger, and the Elect will meet with great *temptations*, and be *scoft at* by the Seed and Spirit of Reason, and must be brought through the powers of *justice, death, and hell*, and in such *trouble and sorrow* that never was known to them before: "But (Jesus said) he that shall "endure unto the end the same shall be saved," i. e. he who is in the *royal priesthood* and work the works of Faith is found *worthy*, and called under the justice of the Father, and from thence given birth to the mercy of the SON: But the cherubical Litteralist will be called under the justice of the angel, and never come to under the justice of the Father, so cannot *endure to that end*: But the cherubims may, nay will die, in the profession of the letter, as will the Elect: THEREFORE when the *Call* comes, let the Elect *flee* from the priesthood and *House* of Reason, to the priesthood and HOUSE of Faith, and not *turn back* on any account for any thing that he has *left behind*, nor to bid them farwell that are of the house of Reason let them be who they will, for if he do, he is in great danger of being buried in the ruins of *Jerusalem*, and be found unworthy to *bear the Cross of Christ*; for when the *Cry* is made that *Christ is coming*, they who are of the house of Reason, will do all they can to defend that priesthood; therefore Jesus said, "And woe "unto them that are with child, and to them that give "suck in those days," i. e. *Woe to them* whose blind zeal, (which is the daughter of Reason or of *Jerusalem*) is so powerful in them, as to gather in the traditions of Reason, and judge it to be the *will and intent* of God, and from that *conceive anger* against the Messenger, because his declaration is contrary to their conceivings; and that will *give birth* to the spiritual *son of perdition* that is born

of Reason, and comes forth in wrath and *blasphemy*, and will curse the spirit of Christ off the earth, if possible : To *give suck*, is to encourage this very thing, because they cannot *bear the kingdom of Christ should come* or exist.

Further, *Many* will come forth in the name of JESUS, with a tongue of a cherubim, *prophecy* and promise salvation, cry “ *Lo here* is Christ and salvation, and *lo there* is Christ and salvation,” *preach* in the name of Jesus display their cherubical wisdom on the outward word or bare letter, and from this promise life and salvation ; but in *this promise* of life is contained death ; and Reason will *divide* and contend for his priesthood, and speak *evil* of each other concerning their Faith : Families will also be *divided*, husband against *wife*, and wife against *husband* ; parents against their *children*, and children against their *parents* : For the Elect will *leave the bonds* of death and the law, which is by generation and contract, to be regenerated to CHRIST in the royal and true *Family* of Faith : Therefore great *troubles and temptations* will follow, to the Elect ; for they must *stand* against the powers of *Reason* and torments of *Hell and Death* :—

Ver. 22. JESUS said, “ And except those days should “ be shortened there should no flesh be saved, but for “ the Elects sake those days *shall* be shortened.” Those *days that are shortened*, is the *days* and power of Reason, in their temptations and wrathful proceedings, that the Elect *shall* offer the true incense, and work the works of Faith, (for the power of *Reason, Death, Hell, &c.* is so great, that it will incumber, hurry, drive, or tempt the soul from every act of Faith, and drown him in the horror of Reason’s *care* and torment if *possible*, was not his *days shortened* both within and without Elect man, that they may work the works of Faith) have divine assistance from HEAVEN, eat of the *Tree of Life*, and live for ever ! For the internal Angel in justice has power given him from Heaven over man, and he being in mystical union, and spiritual communion with him or them
who

who sit in the power of justice, then at the least *notice* from Heaven, he will do the will of GOD, as to *bind or loose* Reason, and force it to do that which it would not :— Now it is to be *understood*, when Faith is born, and *taken* into its own priesthood, the internal Angel in justice will oftimes be its friend, and curb Reason, that Faith shall offer its own prayer, and receive power from Heaven to remove internal *mountains*; and the more Faith *grows* or increases in regeneration, the more the *days* or power of Reason is *shortened*, in the soul of Elect man : And it is my soul's desire and prayer, that the *days* and power of Reason may speedily be shortened in, and concerning the Elect, that they may work the works of Faith, be found *ready*, so *worthy to stand before JESUS* when they are called upon, to be given spiritual birth, and sealed by Christ the king of Faith, then die in the bed of mercy to be raised by *Jesus to eternal glory*, and the power of Reason is then ended to that soul;—and when the Elect are sealed in or concerning the Messenger's *day or hour*, then the *days* or power of Reason's persecution is *cut off*, because they cannot persecute the spirit of Christ when it is out of their way.

Again, Jesus said, “ For as the lightening cometh out “ of the east and shineth even unto the west, so shall “ also the coming of the son of man be ; ” Now this is the true spiritual and the *internal Sign* to the Elect, for when Faith is quickened from death to life, or born from its womb or seed, and *taken* into the royal Priesthood of Faith, then Christ is promised to that soul, and being in the priesthood of Christ, that incense ascends to Heaven for divine assistance, and the soul must stedfastly *watch*, and patiently wait *Christ to come* in spirit ; and the divine influence of the holy *Spirit* of Christ which is the *heavenly enlightening* that decends to this pure Virgin daughter of Faith, fills her with prayer, divine assistance and thanksgiving to him that sits in the glory of Mercy ; and this gives Elect men *new life*, and they speak with a *new tongue* ; then Reason may *wonder but know not from whence this come*, and *whither it go* ; for the declaration of the

Messenger assisted by Christ from Heaven is the *lightning* or bright *Star* that *appears in the East*, and gives the *sign of the SON OF MAN*, also guides the Virgin daughter of Faith unto the *Son of man*; and she is *given* to him, and *taken* by him, in holy marriage through the justice of the Father: So the *holy Spirit* of Christ from Heaven is the *lightening that cometh out of the east and shineth even unto the west*, i. e. the *Spirit* of Christ shine for regeneration, to the pure *Virgin* daughter of Faith and return to HIM again, by *divine incense*, and this is the royal and true *priesthood* of Faith, which Reason never can enter into, although they may transform themselves into the Messenger's declaration, even in the Messenger's day; therefore *they cannot tell from whence this light come, and whither it go*: But Reason will grow angry at this, and *preach* a Christ of his own conceptions on the letter, go forth and war against the true Christ, and his royal priesthood, and *prophecy* to *tempt* and *deceive* the Elect; hence mind this,—Christ doth not *come* according to the signs and *observations* of Reason but by those *tokens* in the royal *priesthood* of Faith, which is the *Road* for Christ, as there *HE will come to gather his Elect*; but Reason are gathered in their own priesthood, under the power of the angel in justice: Ver. 28. "For wheresoever the carcase" "is there will the eagles be gathered together," i. e. Reason will naturally go to its own *home*, and Faith to CHRIST.

MOROVER (Ver. 29.) JESUS said, "Immediately" "after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be" "darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and" "the stars shall fall from Heaven, and the power of the" "Heavens shall be shaken." *Those days of tribulation* are the *days* when the mighty works of Faith are worked against the powers of Reason, death, hell, &c. both internal and external; also the *days of prophecy* even in the *sorrowful vale* of death, that Christ will *come* to redeem them from under those powers; for this must be done in or by *Man* to be found worthy to be called under the justice of the Father; *which* when done, then *the power* of

of his Heavens are shaken, i. e. although he has *prophecied* of, and expected the *Son*, yet he must go through the justice of the *Father* to the *mercy of the SON*, or no life eternal! Therefore the *SON* is indeed *darkened* to the soul! *and the moon shall not give her light*, i. e. all the *peace* and joy he had in or with the declaration of the Messenger, power he had over the souls of other men thereby, all the *hope* he possessed by the promise, and all the flow of *waters* in the given priesthood of Reason, which is to be enjoyed in the days of a Messenger: *Now* those things *shine* sweetly in the soul, but it is as *Moonlight*, yet they are stopt, or *turned to blood* in the soul of man: *AND the stars shall fall from Heaven*, i. e. all his *revelation* and *assistance* from Heaven to remove internal mountains, and even the *prophecy of Christ to come*, which are heavenly *Stars* to the soul, in the *Moonlight* glory to Faith, yet *they will fall from their glory*, as the *flower-root droops her flower*, at the time of great drought or distress: Yea all the power and excuses of Reason is *cast off*, even as a tree cast her *untimely fruit*, at the time of great trial and distress: *In this manner will the power of the Heavens be shaken*, in and to the soul of Elect man: For when the soul is called under the justice of the Father, and asked, what he has done to save himself, or is he yet united to the *high merciful covenant of CHRIST* for salvation? Then the answer is no! And his whole *power* of Faith is here inquired for!—Then, man will find he has no power to save himself, and wil. *stand helpless, naked, and bare before this Justice*, only, the prayer of Faith is not stopt in him: Therefore the justice of the Father is opened to him and through it it he must go or no life eternal; for there is Death and Hell ready to swallow up the soul; He may look back from whence he came but *those waters are turned to blood*, and no more life there! For all the flow of those *sweet waters* that he possessed under the Messenger as *Moonlight*, cannot *shine* in the soul; all his *revelations* and *prophecy*, in those *netber waters* under the Messenger which

which are *Stars* to the soul, are *fell from that Heaven* and cannot give their light; and the *Son* is darkened by the justice of the Father; and the *Heaven* he possessed is *rolled up, and departed* from him; for he being called under the justice of the Father, the internal Angel in justice will no more let him go back to the *nether waters*, for that *Time is then ended*, and it is the same to that soul as if all the *Luminaries* fell from this natural *heavenly Orb*, for eternity immediately to take place, because the *Power* of the justice of the Father is so mighty and so great! THEREFORE this spiritual *Heaven* to the soul is *shaken or fled away*, for every *island of refuge* and *Mountain of hope* in the *nether waters* is *moved* and gone, the aforesaid *lights* shine not at this season; through the justice of the Father they must go, or death eternal is the consequence; then, in this condition of soul the *Virgin Daughter* offers her eager prayer of Faith to Heaven for divine assistance; then, *appear the sign of the Son of man in Heaven*, (above the justice of the Father) to this *Virgin*, and unite with her in holy marriage, then beget to himself the *spiritual son* of Faith, which is born of this *Virgin Daughter* from under the justice of the Father, and is brought through it to the royal and glorious *mercy of the SON*, and then is united to him in *HIS own covenant* of mercy, which is above the justice of the Father, then falls asleep in that merciful *Bed* for resurrection unto life eternal; thus, the *Elect* will find they must lose themselves in their *own blood in death*, under the justice of the Father, to be quickened into a new *Life* to the glorious mercy of the *SON*: So when the *Elect* have worked the works of Faith, and is found *worthy* to be called upon under the justice of the Father, then Christ take the soul and makes it *perfect*.

AGAIN when those *great troubles* come to pass, the *Elect* may know *their time of deliverance draweth nigh*, but human nature will tremble and mourn; and Reason cannot appear when the *Elect* are gathered to the mercy of the Son, but this *understand*, their *judgment day* is then

then over, for they will see no more condemnation nor sorrow, but *they* are passed from death to Life, for the next state is glory ! So *Blessed* is him or them that enter the royal priesthood, and abide in the works, to go through the *days of tribulation*, and of *prophecy*, then their sins are done away, and the soul is passed from death to life, fit to meet JESUS in his personal glory ! But the personal appearance of Christ in his glory, will be the beginning of sorrow and mourning to the Seed of Reason, that die in manhood, under the seal of the angel in justice, for then this natural *Heaven* which is the Heaven to Reason will *dissolve*, and never more will be restored, for the *Sun, Moon, and Stars will fall* from their glory, and their lights pass away ; then darkness and desolation will take place and reign for ever : Thus the Elect by the works of Faith and divine assistance from Heaven, are taken through and from this mighty *Judgment and power* : But it is left, suddenly to come upon Reason to their overthrow in *desolation*, then will those *tribes of the earth mourn* !

Moreover, when the Messenger appear to call the Elect, he himself is *the Sign of the Son of Man*, but his appearance is in the nether *Heaven* of Faith, i. e. the royal priesthood ! Therefore Jesus said, " And he " shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his *Elect* from the " four winds, from one end of Heaven to the other." Those *Angels* are his Messengers that come out in his covenant of grace, to call the *Elect* from the *Heaven* of Reason to the *nether Heaven* of Faith : Also *understand*, that JESUS himself gathers his Elect where his *Messengers are not*, for by the influence of his merciful spirit, *HE in secret* guide them, and his divine nature's *Voice* is an *Angel* that calls the *Elect* to himself, to receive his royal and merciful Seal for eternal life ; and when HE is graciously pleased to *send one back*, he is a Messenger from JESUS according to the *hour of the day*, and must call the *Elect* ; but there is not, nor possible can be, any thing

thing done in the Compact and Priesthood of Faith, without the divine assistance of *JESUS from Heaven*, for all the quickening power to Faith, for to bring *Life* out of *Death*, is in and of the *Sonship of GOD*: So when the Messenger *calls*, it is to the Elect, and *gather them together* from out of Reason's *Heaven*, and from the *four winds*, which are stayed upon Reason and its *Heaven* as yet, till the *Elect* have worked their works, and are sealed by Jesus for eternal glory: And those *four winds*, the *Elect* are gathered from, (even from one end of *Heaven* to the other) is from under the power of *justice*, of *sin*, of *death*, and of *hell*, which will all be loosed in full upon dark Reason anon;—thus, the *Elect* must leave the *Heaven* of Reason behind, to come into the *Royal Priesthood* (i. e. the *nether Heaven* of Faith,) work the works of Faith against the powers of Reason, &c. and prophecy of *Christ to come*: NOW, when the soul has left the *Heaven* of Reason for the *nether Heaven* of Faith, work in and through this great tribulation he may know *JESUS is near his coming*: Therefore Jesus said, “Now learn a parable of the fig-tree, when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves ye know that summer is nigh,” this *Fig-tree that putteth forth leaves*, is the spirit of Reason in the Elect, to tempt and overcome them if possible, but Faith by prayer and patience will *overcome*, and Reason in them will be dried up and wither away, that Faith may flourish in the glory of the SON; and it also note the *sudden coming of Christ*; therefore let the *Virgin* daughter of Faith *lift up herself* in prayer, and the soul *steadfastly watch*, for her *BRIDEGROOM is nigh* at hand to deliver her from those mighty *sorrows* and pains of hell: And when the *sign of the son of man appear in Heaven*, the soul will find that all the glory he possessed in this *nether Heaven* of Faith, which is under justice, will be *darkened* by the justice of the Father, and *pass away* for this season, before Faith can be born or translated, to pass to the *upper Heaven* of Faith, i. e. to the mercy of the SON: For the high covenant of the mercy of the Son, wherein dwelleth the seal of the *living God* for the

the resurrection to eternal glory, so far transcend the justice of the Father, that the *nether Heaven* to Faith must *pass away* to the soul, and he must lose himself in his own blood in death, under the justice of the Father, to pass from the nether, to the upper Heaven of Faith, so mighty and so great is the justice of the Father, and every one must be found *worthy* to be called under that justice, then the *son of man* appear, and take the soul through that justice, to his own glorious covenant of mercy.

Yea. when the *son of man* is revealed on this earth, by his Messenger sent from Heaven, then great *tribulation and sorrow* will follow; and the Elect must stedfastly *watch* and patiently *wait HIS coming* in spirit, for except he first comes in spirit, to seal the soul for his resurrection to eternal life the man is left *desolate*; and HIS coming in personal glory, will be the beginning of *sorrow and mourning, to the tribes of the earth*: ALSO *understand*, the mighty works of Faith and prophecy, IS in the day or hour of a *Messenger*, and through *tribulation* Faith must go, as well in our days, as in the *Apostles* days; for men must be brought through those mighty powers, up to the seal of the *King of glory*; therefore Jesus said, "Verily I say unto you this generation shall not pass till all *those things* be fulfilled." Hence it is clear that those *tribulations and sorrows*, Christ and his apostles went through in their days; so (as I have said,) GOD the Father and great creator of Heaven and earth, left his glorious throne which was of justice, transmuted himself into his own created nature of *Adam*, and became a true *Son* to the *Power* of the Father which is his own *Power of justice*, to become the God of *Mercy*; for HE kept the law of Faith in *fallen* human nature, and offered the royal incense of Faith before the glorious throne of the Father, which *was and is* of justice; HE also went through the power and *tribulations* of Reason, and *prophecied* under the power of justice in the *sorrowful vale* of death, of his going into his glorious Kingdom of

F f

mercy;

mercy ; also lost himself in death in his own blood, (under the justice of the Father,) to quicken out of that death into a new life, to his own royal and glorious mercy, which is of the SON ; And by HIS becoming Man to bring in his holy gospel, and *working* the mighty works of redemption, HE, became the *elder brother* to his Elect in the holy gospel, who serve the *younger* ; therefore all the Elect must follow him through those *tribulations, and prophecy in the sorrowful vale of death* ; and as he went before to *prepare mansions* of mercy for them, they must *patiently* wait, and *steadfastly* watch his *coming to SEAL* them for his glorious *Mansions* : And those *great tribulations* and works of Faith, the Elect must go through, and *WATCH* the *coming of Christ in the Day* of a Messenger of Jesus in HIS royal Priesthood of Faith, let it be in any generation, or time under the Gospel ; for when *Christ come* to seal the soul for ETERNAL GLORY, then this world is ended and *judgment day* is past to that soul, and as Jesus said, “ *This generation shall not pass till all these things be fulfilled,*” so it is in every generation under the gospel, for *time* did not end in general, when the Apostles and Elect of that time died : So the Elect may expect to go through those *works and tribulations*, to pass their day of trial and judgment to sleep in the bed of mercy, to be ready to meet Jesus in his personal glory, when he comes to put an end to all *time*.

Also HE said, “ Heaven and earth shall pass away, “ but my words shall not pass away,” i. e. all the mighty *works* of Jesus, and his mighty *judgments* in his redemption and regeneration ; the *great tribulation* and *works* of Faith, the Elect must work, to go through justice to mercy ; *HIS coming* in spirit to *seal* the souls of his Elect for his glorious kingdom ; *HIS leaving Reason* behind under the seal of the Angel for eternal death ; and his personal *coming in great glory*, to raise his Elect to eternal glory, and give a final overthrow to the kingdoms of the earth, and of the dark spirit : *Now* all the mighty

mighty works of *creation* of Heaven and earth, which is of the *Father*, will *pass away*, and dissolve, *before any one jot or tittle of the word* of the SON will fail, in his redemption, judgments, sanctification, &c. For as God left the throne of justice, to gain the kingdom of mercy at the end of *time*, Moses and Elias will be translated to the glory of the SON! so the *glory* of justice will *pass away*, and the GLORY of mercy for ever *stand* to the royal *Linage* of Faith: But as I have said, the Elect must leave Reason's *Heaven*, i. e. the *earth*, to *pass* to the *nether Heaven* of Faith, i. e. the royal *Priesthood*, and then *pass* through the justice of the *Father* to the glorious mercy of the SON; for all *rule and Power* in Heaven and earth will *pass away*, but the kingdom of Christ will for ever *stand*.

C H A P XXVII.

FURTHER (Ver. 37.) JESUS said, "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be," now in the *days of Noah*, the *Sons of God* saw the *daughters of men were fair*, and they took them for *Wives*, and they bear them *children*, i. e. the sons of the genealogy of *Adam*, took to them the daughters of *Cain's* genealogy and forgot themselves, so *generation* became corrupt among men in the *sight of God*, yet men thought themselves wonderful wise in their own conceit, therefore *Noah* only was found a *just man* and *perfect* in his generation; for God saw the wickedness of man was great and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was evil continually, and the earth was filled with *violence*: Now as *Noah* was perfect in his generation before God, he *walked with God*, i. e. he was *obedient* to God, and God made his intent known to *Noah*, for then the earth was filled with the *violent spirit* of Reason, that

it was hard to find one born of the *royal lineage* of Faith, to be capable of regeneration for the kingdom of Christ : SO as the *end of all flesh* was in the *sight of God*, then he inspired *Noah* to build an ARK of safety for all to come into, that was found *worthy* to be saved from the *deluge* ; also it grieved *Noah* to see the wickedness of men, and *vexed* him to the heart ; because he warned them to *flee from their evil*, that they may escape God's *wrath to come*, and they would not, but thought him a fool, and treated him with contempt and scorn, for warning them to fly from their evil, as if they had all power in themselves, and their going on was right, which was in a regardless manner to Virtue and *Truth* ; for they followed their own wild and loose inclinations and desires, and excuse themselves according to their own will which was the steps of old *Cain*, and like him became *men of renown*, build cities, make great settlements and gather the treasures of the *earth*, then they may *eat, drink*, and be *merry* ; and *marry* each other that their names may be enrolled in monumental earthly greatness, till the *flood came* and destroyed them in the height of their glory : So Jesus said, " For as the days that were before the " flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and " giving in marriage until the day that Noah entered " into the Ark : and knew not until the flood came, and " took them all away ; so shall also the coming of the " son of man be."

: AGAIN, The *sign of the son of man now appear* in this present Messenger, who do declare the *wickedness* of this age is as great, and generation *corrupt* as in the days of *Noah* ; and the *end of all flesh is now in the sight of God* : Then as *Noah* was instructed by God himself, to *build an Ark* of safety, to save all that was found worthy from the *deluge*, so it is with the present Messenger, who come out from the grand *ALTER of Faith*, for he invites and and prays the Elect to *come* from the acts and designs, and from *wallowing* in the dark mire and filth of this wicked world, into the royal *Priesthood* and *works of Faith*,

Faith, that they may be brought up to the spiritual birth, seal, and sanctification of Christ the king of Faith, which is the *spiritual ARK of safety*, for then they sleep in the bed of mercy, to be raised to everlasting glory, while the *fire of wrath*, will on a *sudden come* upon Reason, and overthrow it with an eternal destruction: ALSO when this present *Messenger* do declare the will of God, and works of Faith, which is a *warning* to them, even as *Noah gave warning*, in building his *Ark*, but men are apt to excuse themselves by each others evil, which is *abomination* in the sight of God: So the present *Messenger* in the eye of Reason is troublesome, and they judge of him by the spirit of Reason, treat him with contempt and scorn; for the going out of Reason, is to seek and gather the *riches* of this earth, make great settlements, build mansions, and give them names, *eat, drink, and be merry*, rule over the souls of men, marry, and give in marriage for, or into earthly greatness, and to leave behind great sums of money, possessions, mansions, &c. as an *inheritance* to posterity, that their names may be enrolled in monumental greatness for their *acts*, and have their own family praise: So Reason will act in their own *filthy mire*, excuse themselves in their own *wild* priesthood, then hold the Messenger in contempt and scorn, that it is a rare thing to find one capable of regeneration to *enter the Ark of Christ*.

Moreover, when the *present Messenger* calls or invites the Elect to come into the *spiritual Ark*, and they also may *look for Christ to come*, so it is good for them to *flee* from the *sottish mire* of Reason, i. e. the world, and come to the *Messenger*, and priesthood of Faith, and work the works to be *prepared for the spiritual Ark*, which is the *seal and sanctification* of Christ the King of Faith, for eternal glory: ALSO it gives Reason notice that the *time of his destruction draweth nigh*, think what he will to the contrary, and suggest to himself what excuse he please in his own wild priesthood, that he may go on in his abominable acts: For as the *Messenger* is come to give
this

this notice, and declare the *will of God*, therefore him or them that do not *follow the Messenger* are left *desolate* in their own wisdom on the bare letter (as aforesaid) to excuse themselves in their own evil, and by the evil of each other, and fall into death under the seal of the internal Angel in justice, *then* they will find what the *Messenger* said was true, but then their *Heaven* is over, and *Hell* began, for *CHRIST* will suddenly come to call his Elect to his glorious kingdom, and the cherubims will follow by the echo of his *ALMIGHTY VOICE*, then *death and hell* will also give up their dead unto eternal death; thus Reason will on a sudden be overthrown in in his own wisdom, in death eternal, which is a living death in utter darkness: *Therefore BLESSED* and happy are them who *obey this present Call*, leave *behind* Reason's Heaven, which men will perish with, *come* into the royal priesthood of Faith, and *go up* to the seal of *Jesus the King of Faith*, which is *the spiritual Ark of safety*, that will bear the Elect up into eternal glory, when they are called.

AGAIN (Luke xvii.) Jesus said, "Likewise also as " it was in the days of Lot : They did eat, they drank, " they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded : " Now the city of *Sodom* differ something from the old world, for the *sons of Adam's genealogy*, took the *daughters of Cain's genealogy*, and became imperfect in generation for to become *men of Renown*, and have great settlements, which was contrary to the will of God, then justice took place which brought his *judgment* and overthrewed them in their evil : But the city of *Sodom* gave themselves up to concupiscence, sodomitical practice, and loose desires, all to please themselves in their own *wild and filthy Way*, for they *eat, they drink, they bought, they sold*, (the acts of citizens,) also to *build and plant*, to have lasting habitations, for their evil acts, then excuse themselves in their own *wild* priesthood; and by each others evil, and wickedness become such as would destroy *generation*, which is against the *decree of God*, to please themselves

themselves in their own *lustful desires*, and *violent acts*, for which cause God *rained fire and brimstone from Heaven*, and destroyed all in their wickedness, and they *knew it not* until it came upon them: For let not the Seed of Reason think they come into this world altogether to do their own will, be at their own disposal, and please themselves their *own way*; but to do the *will of God* according to generation, love and serve their neighbour, being created under a *Law* so to do; and when the Law is broke justice take place, and become of infinite consequence for which cause judgments are brought upon *wicked nations*, cities, people, &c. Now is God brought destruction upon *wicked nations*, cities, and people that *generation* should go on according to his *decree in creation*; what judgments will he not bring on the souls of men to remove evil, that *regeneration* according to the mighty *works of HIS redemption* should be compleated?

CHRIST mention the *old world*, and cities of *Sodom and Gomorrah*, to the likeness of the *destruction* of the world, they being destroyed by the vengeance of God from Heaven, and so will the whole world; also those cities are found now *the son of Man is revealed* by his present *Messenger*, for many are striving for the wealth and settlements of this world, &c. which is its kingdoms, and excuse themselves; others for the kingdoms of the *dark spirit*, which is to act against God, invade Heaven, and excuse themselves: Now those two kingdoms will *crucify the Lord of life*; for although *many* has taken the literal declaration and would own themselves the *sons of God*, but by the letter strove to become *men of renown* in their own *kingdom*, so not regard the regeneration of Christ: Further, this present *Messenger* do declare *regeneration*, and the *hour of the day* and invite into the *ARK of Christ*, then if men take this declaration, which is for regeneration to Christ; and after that *see the daughters of men are fair*, and take of them to wife, i. e. take this declaration, and judge of it by the *spirit* of emulated Reason, which

is the *daughters of men that appear fair*, because they give liberty to do as you please, go forth, preach, excuse yourselves, become *men of Renown, Giants* in imagination, &c. So as them of the old world acted contrary to the *Will and generation of God*, and could not enter the *Ark of Noah*; so those act contrary to the *regeneration of Christ*, and cannot enter his *spiritual ARK*: But the *City of Sodom* is of the dark wrathful blasphemous blind *spirit*, that would cut off and destroy the *regeneration of Christ*, even as the sodomites would the *generation of God* by filthy acts; so the earth is now, *filled with violence*, and as ripe for destruction as the aforesaid places:—NOW this, IS spiritually the *Days of Noah, Lot, Egypt*, or the *Great city Jerusalem*, that act against, and *crucify the Lord of Life*; so mind what is written, and seek to enter the *Ark of Christ*.

Further, I would have you *understand*, when any nation, city, &c. is to be destroyed, a *Messenger* is first sent to *prophecy* against it, and gather the righteous from it, as *Noah* to the old world, the *angels* to Sodom, *Jonas* to Ninevah, &c. which *prophecy* was no more than inspired Reason, because those places were of the *wild* priesthood of Reason; neither was there any blood found to be spilt in them for the *prophecy and testimony of Christ*, so their evils were natural: But when Moses uttered the *given* priesthood with the law, and the prophecies of *Christ to come* were recorded, then men took it into their traditions, and became judges in their own *wild Way*, not only of the law and given priesthood of Reason, but also of the *prophecies* of Christ to come, then this become the *city of Jerusalem* wherein is found the *spirit* of wrath and persecution against *CHRIST* and his *Messengers*; for in this City is found the *blood* of Christ and all his Messengers, in and by persecution, and it is now in act against the present *Messenger*; therefore it is the divine *Voice* of Faith that prophecies against this *City*, and where the *gospel* was declared, and *persecution* found, which centers to one head or *great City*, for which
cause

cause JESUS said, (Mat. xi.) "Woe, unto thee Chorazin;
 " woe unto Bethsaida, for if the mighty works which
 " were done in thee, had been done in Tyre and Sidon
 " they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and
 " ashes; but I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable
 " for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment, than for
 " you: And thou Capernaum which art exalted unto
 " Heaven, shall be brought down to Hell, for if the
 " mighty works which have been done in thee, had been
 " done in Sodom, it would have remained until this
 " day; but I say unto you, that it shall be more toler-
 " able for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment
 " than for you." Now *Tyre, Sidon, Sodom, Gomorrah, &c.*
 being more *tolerable in the day of judgment*, is because
 their sins were *natural* and filthy evils, pride, covetousness,
 self design, oppression, &c. *BUT the City of Jerusalem,*
 and those places where the holy *Gospel* was declared, and
 holy *Spirit of CHRIST* blasphemed, warred against and
 persecuted, then, those are *spiritual* sins, which if men
 cannot be *taken* from in their bud, but left to go on with
 increase and die in them; then, this sin is *intolerable*, and
 cannot be forgiven in *the days of a Messenger of CHRIST*,
 nor will it when the dead are raised, at the end of all
Time; therefore more *tolerable* for a natural sin, than for
 that of blasphemy, and persecution of the holy *Spirit*
of Christ: Also all natural sins are sealed by the Angel
 of justice, so *cherubical inspiration* has, and may pro-
 phecy against it; but it is the *Spirit of Christ* that de-
 clares and prophecies against the unbelieving, lying,
 hard-hearted, unmerciful, uncharitable, blasphemous,
 persecuting, and murdering *spirit of Reason*, that *war*s
against the SPIRIT and power of Christ; and this *spirit*
 of Reason is that which is the *great city Jerusalem*:
 AND I would men understand, the *prophecies of Christ*
 and *HIS inspiration*, far transcend the prophecies of in-
 spired Reason; so Jesus said of the preaching of Jonas
 (Mat. xii.) "The men of Nineveh shall raise in judgment
 " with this generation, and shall condemn it, because
 " they

“ they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold “ a greater than Jonas is here,” i. e. the people of *Nineveh* obeyed the voice of *Jonas*, repented of their *evil*, and God’s justice was stayed upon them; but the people of *Jerusalem*, &c. would not obey the Voice of the SON of GOD, and *repent* of their *evil*, because they had the letter and prophecies to search in; and give judgment thereon in their wild priesthood of Reason, and sure in themselves they were right; but the priesthood of Reason, Christ and HIS Messengers prophecy against.

Moreover, the present Messenger well knows and experimentally finds, he can gather from the aforesaid *Cities*, before he can from *Jerusalem*, Why? Because in them are found sinners, but in *Jerusalem* they are all *righteous* in themselves, and know their own *way to Heaven*: So *understand*, those cities are found at this day, in and by *assemblies and sects of people*, and not only so, but in private individuals, such as selfish designs, lustful desires, criminal acts, oppression to get great, and unite their families to shine in this world, and all evils that Reason can be guilty of;—Now if the external Angel catch the person, he is brought to public justice, or public censure and shame; but it is the wisdom of Reason to pass that Angel if possible by concealing his evil; and if he do, the internal Angel take and seal him down to death eternal, so it is impossible to escape; then Reason will do all he can to excuse himself and conceal his evil, and this self-cunning to conceal from others, is his *City or strong-hold* in himself, wherein dwelleth *evil*, and whereon God’s *judgment will come* as in time past: Also, there never was a *City* yet destroyed for their *evil*, but there is the same evil to be found concealed in the *strong city* in the soul of man, which will eat him up like a caterpillar or canker-worm.

Also, I would have men understand, that when Reason goeth out on any act, there is always an *horse and rider* goeth with him, to watch him, and will give in a true report to the Angel in justice: So let Reason be ever

so cunning, or deep in his evils, and concealment thereof, his depth is fathomed and seen through, and sealed under them for death eternal, because the *Law* is the *horse* that goeth forth, and *truth* is the *Rider*, and rides on the *black* acts of Reason; then *truth* will give into justice, and when the law is broke the soul is sealed, to be swallowed up by the relentless power of justice, like as the relentless *sea*, will swallow up the eager life of man: NOW, as when a place is to be destroyed, there is a *Messenger* sent to prophecy against it, and *gather the righteous* from it; and as aforesaid, cherubical *Inspiration* can prophecy against those *Cities*, and them cities with others was very hateful in the sight of *Jerusalem*, because at *Jerusalem* they held the letter of the *law* and *prophecies* by their constructed priesthood of Reason, from that which Moses had given, and poured out their judgment against other people, places, cities, &c.—But when Christ came HE prophesied against *Jerusalem*, and it was destroyed accordingly: Now when the *great* is prophesied against, the *less* will fall of consequence, because the *prophecies of Faith* are so mighty and so great!

AGAIN, the present *Messenger* came out in the *spirit* and *power of CHRIST*, to *call the Elect* into the royal priesthood of Faith, that they may go up to the *seal of Jesus*, which is the grand *spiritual ARK of safety*; also to prophecy against the *GREAT CITY Jerusalem*, which is all them that *profess the Letter* in their own wild way in the priesthood of Reason: Also the *Messenger*, do declare this Generation is very *wicked, corrupt, and filthy*, and the *end of all flesh is in the sight of God*: So Reason may shortly expect its *final dissolution*, because the *ROYAL VISITOR* is near his *coming* to put an end to all *time*,—for Reason has acted as if he came into this world to please himself; for all the goings out of Reason is to satisfy his *lustful desire*, eat well, drink well, make a great appearance, &c. and *care for to morrow*; and what is it that Reason will not do to accomplish his design,

though he often fail in his attempt to his great mortification, neither do he ever find things according to his expectation. Now, the spirit of Reason captivate the Elect, and they dwell in and among this evil, which is equal to Tyre, Sidon, Sodom, &c.; but when the voice of God in the *Messenger*, centers to the womb or Seed of Faith, and quickens it from death to life, then there is a *Daughter* of Faith born for regeneration, and she is *taken* into the royal priesthood of Faith, offers her own prayer which is the true incense, then will receive the *holy spirit* of Christ by influence, from whence springs *fresh beams* of knowledge, with divine instruction, which is the *internal SIGN* to Elect men; and she is brought through the wilds and temptations of Reason, then called under the justice of the Father, and is united in holy and spiritual marriage with Christ; then after this is given birth to the *spiritual Son*, born of the *Virgin Daughter* from under the justice of the Father, to the high merciful *Covenant of the SON*, and is sealed by JESUS for life eternal,—thus, the soul pass above the *Orb* of justice, into the transcendant *Heaven* of mercy.

Moreover, *BLESSED and happy* are they that are so *prepared to meet JESUS* in his personal glory, which must be done by entering into the royal priesthood of Faith, then they will truly agree with the present *Messenger*, and gather their way as he do, according to their portion; for let men suggest what they will they must agree with this *present Messenger*,—their Faith must chord with his, like a well tuned instrument of music, otherwise they cannot enter the royal priesthood of Faith: So those men that cannot be brought out of those *cities* as the *old world*, Tyre, Sidon, Sodom, Gomorrah, Nineveh, Babylon, &c. (for the present Messenger calls from the *strong-holds* of Reason, equal to all those cities) then if they will remain in them, they are left *desolate* under the seal of the Angel in justice, and will be their own witness to their own condemnation.—AND if a man from the *present Messenger*, can receive no more than the outward
word

word or bare letter, he will take it into the priesthood of Reason; yet he will say, "God is the teacher of his Elect, and nothing can be done without the assistance of God," then when *death and judgment come*, there is nothing done for salvation, and *he* is called under the justice of the Angel, and go off *murmuring* into death, in saying, "If God had assisted him, he could have worked the works of Faith," which is in effect, charging God with evil and neglect:" Now as the present *Messenger* prophecies against the *great CITY Jerusalem*, i. e. the *whole priesthood* of Reason, and this prophecy is conveyed over the *whole power of Reason*, as the *prophecy* of Faith is of an unmeasured scope; therefore let Reason be ever so highly exalted in his own wisdom and power; *strong is the Lord God of Heaven* who has given them up to *judgment, which will shortly come to pass.*

C H A P. XXVIII.

FURTHER, concerning the *Mystery* of Faith in regeneration and *coming of CHRIST to judgment* (as Mark xiii.) "But of that day, and that hour, knoweth no man, no not the Angels which are in Heaven, neither the son, but the Father only;" Now this saying of Jesus is so mysterious, that there must be great part of *John's visional book of prophecy opened to man* before he can declare this sacred *mystery* of Faith, because it is in and of regeneration; For as God created the man Adam of his own divine nature, and *Adam was the son of God* in and according to creation; but as Adam being created under a law, hearkened to the voice of Reason and fell under the power of death, and in death would be disunited from its living Father and Creator: *Thus God the Creator and Father to Faith, became the God of justice*

justice to his own created nature, through the acts of his own children *Adam* and *Eve*; so in this fallen state, Faith is born into this world to this day; then, when the Voice of the **LORD GOD OF FAITH**, by his Messenger or from himself *walks in the garden* which is the womb or Seed of Faith in the soul of Elect man fell under the power of justice; and the utterance of that voice is "Faith, where art thou?" Here fallen Faith is called to, and soon let know, what condition it is in; then there follow justice and wrath, which is *fire*, and is *mingled with blood*, because through justice you must go in your *own blood*, and lose yourself in your *blood*, in death under justice; and all the excuse of Reason is of no use but to condemn the being, yet before this comes he will *flourish* by his own conceit like unto *green trees*, or grass, but *judgment* being cast upon it, all its excuses will be *burnt up*; NOW, this is what the *first Angel* of Faith utter, when the *sound is to fallen Faith* in the soul of Elect man, and the consequence that will follow the *sound* of that Angel: After this Faith being called or quickened from death into a new life, i. e. the *Virgin* daughter of Faith born for regeneration, and to her is given the *promise of Christ*:—Now this is a *new Life*, quickened or born from the womb or Seed of Faith in Elect man, which is a life *distinct* to that of Reason, and to it will come a kingdom contrary to that of Reason, then Reason is angry because he is cast aside as a mountain that will burn with wrath, persecution, and temptation to, or in Elect man; but Reason being cast into his own *waters*, there he must die and perish, with all his arts, emulations, cunning, &c. Now this is what the *second Angel* of Faith utter, when it *sounds* to Faith in Elect man, and the consequence which follows the *sound of that Angel*.

Again, the *Virgin* daughter of Faith being *born*, she is taken into the royal priesthood to work the *works of Faith*, against the powers of *sin*, *death*, and *hell*, then found worthy, and to her is given the *spirit of prophecy*, which is she can truly declare from *Heaven*, that Christ will

will *come* according to the promise given : After this at the hour of death, she is *called* under the justice of the *Father*, and from thence translated to under the mercy of the *SON*, which is to die under the *grand ALTER of Faith*, and made fit for the kingdom of glory, *THEN* the *Lord God of Heaven* in his own time transmuted himself into his *own* created nature of Adam, which was *fallen*, and then he became a true *son* to the power of the *Father*, for *HE* kept the law of Faith, and waded through that justice, and never acted against the glory of his own creation ! *Thus*, the God of justice transmuted himself into *human nature*, to become the God of mercy ! and he came on the prophecies of Faith, (that was prophesied by this pure *Virgin daughter*) for regeneration, not only so, but, to become the royal and only *bridegroom* to this pure *Virgin daughter of Faith* ! *Thus the LORD GOD of Heaven* became the *second man Adam*, that ever trod this earth, to crown regeneration, and bring in salvation ; and he uttered his only gospel, worked the works of Faith for redemption, lost himself in death in his own blood under the justice of the *Father*, then quickened again, and has ascended into the high Heaven of mercy, and men must work the works of Faith to follow, and be accepted of Christ the king of Faith and mercy.

Moreover, as men are *born of the flesh* into this world, to know the things of this world ; even so men must be *born of the spirit of Faith*, to know the works of Faith, and go their way, in regeneration to the salvation of Christ ;—as *first a Daughter* to whom Christ is the royal Bridegroom ;—*then* of this daughter a *son*, and this is the *birth of water*, and of spirit : But understand, that in the days of old, no more than the *Virgin daughter of Faith* could be born to prophecy on this earth ; *until Mary, a virgin of the house of Israel in the genealogy of Faith, bore the Lord God of Heaven, and brought him into this world in a body of flesh, blood, and bone, to be a true SON to the power of the Father* ; and this birth of the *SON* of God by this *Virgin*, is the cause of, (also shew
(forth

forth) the *son* of Christ, being *spiritually born* to Christ, of this spiritual *Virgin* daughter of Faith in regeneration; So as Christ came for *regeneration*, and to make all things *new*, Faith is born to him in *spiritual birth*; as first the *Virgin daughter* who is espoused to Christ, and she will work the works of Faith, then to her is given the *spirit of prophecy*, and she will prophecy in the sorrowful vale of death, of *Christ to come in spirit* and unite with her in holy marriage;—then, of this daughter is born a *son*, which is a *spiritual son* to the *SONSHIP* of God.

AGAIN, I would have the Elect *understand* the distinction between the *Son of God* in and according to creation, and the *Son of God* born of the pure *Virgin daughter*, in and according to regeneration; because *Adam was the son of God* according to creation; but as he fell under justice and death, then the *Virgin Daughter* must be born, and taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, and there to prophecy the Lord God of Heaven would become a *SON* to his own Power, and redeem them from under the power of *justice*, and of *sin*, *death*, and *hell*, which is, God who became the God of justice through the acts of his own children, *Adam and Eve*, would become the God of mercy to them and all the Elect, by the mighty power of his own *Act*: And this *Virgin Daughter* born of the womb or Seed of Faith in the Elect, was the *royal WITNESS OF HIS SPIRIT*, *olive tree*, or *golden candlestick*, in whom the royal incense burn, that stood before him and prophecied when HE was in the condition of God the Father, or the God of justice, and at the hour of death were translated under, and united to, the mercy of the *SON*; for no *son* of this *Virgin daughter*, could come out to prophecy on this earth, until the Lord God of Heaven became a *SON* to his own power.

Further, when the *LORD GOD* of Heaven translated *Enoch, Moses, and Elias into Heaven*, it was to no higher glory than that of the Father, which *was* and *is* of justice; then God made them fit, and invested them

with

with power to *sit* in the glory of the Father, which *is* of justice, while God himself became a SON to his own power of justice to redeem the Elect and make *all things new* : So where *Moses* and *Elias* was translated to, God himself came from, to become the God of mercy ; for he went through the power of the justice of the Father and is ascended into the high *Heaven* of mercy : And *Moses* and *Elias* sit in the glory of the Father to this day, and are the *Angels of the Father*, whom *JESUS* will confess *his royal Elect* before, in holy marriage, because they follow him in the works of Faith under that justice.

AGAIN, as the GOD of Heaven, became the *Man JESUS* on this earth, then according to Faith and human nature, HE *enrolled himself among his Elect, and calls them his FRIENDS and BRETHERN!* For he brought in the holy gospel, and as so was the elder brother in the mighty works of Faith, *in the holy gospel, under the justice of the Father: Then* by the mighty power of Faith HE worked the redemption for his Elect, and *is* ascended into the high heavenly glory of *Mercy*, which far transcend the heavenly glory of *justice*;—Thus, *God the Father* which *was* of justice, is become *God the SON*, which *is* of mercy, to crown regeneration and make all things new to his Elect: Therefore as God the *Father* to his Elect, according to creation which is of justice, He is again become a *Father* to them in regeneration and mercy; so the mighty works of God is this, HE created *Faith* which is of his own divine nature, than of consequence its *Father*, but created *Faith* broke its own Law, then the justice of the *Father* took place, which is disunion and death from its living *Father* and Creator, and this became of an infinite consequence both to *Father* and *son*: After this God the Creator and *Father* to *Faith*, (who became the God of justice through the acts of his own *children* Adam and Eve,) took his own created nature of *Adam*, which was human nature animated with *Faith* in a *fallen state*, and become a true SON to the Power and Justice of the *Father*, and went

H h

through

through that justice in death, then rose again and is ascended into the high Heaven, to become the *Father* anew to his Elect, which is the Father of mercy, by regeneration for salvation: Hence the Elect may see the difference between the power of the *Father* in and according to *Justice*, and the power of the *Father* in and according to *MERCY*; yet *Him that created* worked this mighty work, and gained to *Himself* the transcendant *POWER of Mercy*.

Yea, as Christ by his almighty *POWER* is become the *Father* of regenerated Faith, i. e. the *Father of Mercy*: And great part of the *world* has transformed themselves into his declaration, so as to own and use it according to their own liking, i. e. to take it into their own wild priesthood of Reason, because they have no other light or life but that of Reason, to understand it: And as *Moses is buried in the soul of man*, which is the acting power of the internal *Angel* in justice, who acts as *Moses* did when here, in and over the *soul of man*, and is as a God to Reason: *Therefore* Faith must be *born* of its womb or seed in those our days, as in the days of old, or in the time of the law, to come into its own royal priesthood to receive the *promise of Christ*, and then must *follow CHRIST* through the power of sin, death, hell, and justice: Also this *Virgin daughter* of Faith, comes forth *pure*, and will remain pure, for she never will hearken to the voice of Reason; true it is, the *soul of man* may, nay is overcome and led aside by or through the temptations of Reason, but when those troubles and storms of Reason arise in the *soul*, the *Virgin daughter* of Faith go into her *ARK* or *BOWER*, and remain entirely clear and pure, because she is for regeneration; and by her prayer and divine assistance from *Heaven* will be brought through those said powers of justice, sin, death, and hell, and come forth an entire pure virgin, who is spiritually *espoused to Jesus* who has become her *royal Bridegroom*, and also has and will come to her in spiritual and holy *marriage*.

Moreover

Moreover this *Virgin daughter* is not under the justice of the *Angel*, but the justice of the *Father* only, as Christ himself was; and offers the prayer of Faith, which ascends up to *Heaven* before the throne of *justice to Faith*, which is of the *Father*, as Christ himself did when on this earth; for to this *Virgin* is given a *censer with incense*, i. e. *Faith* when quickened from death to life is made *able to pray*, which is the censer; and to it *prayer* is given which is the true *incense* that ascends up to *Heaven* before the throne of the *Father*, for the *mercy of the SON*:—Also to this *Virgin daughter of Faith*, is given the spirit of prophecy, that *Christ will come*, and unite with her in holy marriage, bring her through the justice of the *Father*, and redeem her from death; and this is the other *Witness of his spirit that stands and prophecies*: Therefore as the *Virgin daughter stood before HIM*, when he was in the condition of God the *Father*, and prophecied; so do the *Virgin daughter stand and prophecy before the throne of the Father*, now he is in the condition of God the *SON*; which himself did, when He was on this earth a *true SON* to the power of the *Father*; those are the *two Witnesses, olive Trees, or Golden Candlesticks* in whom the royal incense burn, that *stands and prophecies, before the GOD OF THE EARTH*, i. e. before the justice of the *Father*:—So this *Virgin* or *Virgins* are the *TWO WITNESSES of his own Spirit*, in *HIS* royal priesthood or nether *Heaven of Faith*, which is under the *justice of the Father*, because God put himself under his own *justice*, and became the *man Jesus* for the *kingdom of mercy*; and HE prayed, and prophecied of his kingdom of mercy to *come*; and this is the very act of the *Virgin Daughters of Faith*; for the one stood before the justice of the *Father*, and prayed, and prophecied of the *kingdom of Christ to come*, when he was in the condition of God the *Father*; and the other do the same now he is in the condition of God the *SON*; Therefore mind this the *nether Heaven of Faith* is under the *Justice of the Father*, for through that justice Christ himself went to

his own kingdom of Mercy ; So it it is *Faith in Faith, and Faith on Faith, and Faith united to Faith* ; and all centers to *CHRIST* its King, because they offer the incense of Faith (as Christ did.) under the justice of the Father, which ascends before the throne of the Father for the mercy of the SON, and as so are the *two witnesses of his own spirit in the nether Heaven of Faith*, under the justice of the Father ; for as *Heaven* has been pleased to glorify *earth*, *earth* is also made able to glorify *Heaven* !— *ALSO*, those *two witnesses* are to *prophecy a thousand two hundred and three-score days clothed in sack-cloth* ; this is during the time of their *prophecy* and of the *patience and prayer* of Faith, which is the works of Faith to *overcome*, and if done in one day or hour it is the same for salvation, but the Spirit calls it *a thousand two hundred and three-score days*, because it is on this earth in a body of flesh and blood : Now the day or *days of prophecy* is in the sorrowful vale of death, which is in great humbleness and trembling of soul, before the throne of the *Father*, and at this time or those *days*, Reason's *Heaven* is *shut* because he cannot reign on the soul, or tempt the Daughter of Faith from working and prophesying before God ; and when this prophecy is declared, the earthly soul of Reason is angry and plagued, because he cannot stand against it, nor take it into his own priesthood so as to rule over it, while the prophet lives ; therefore the *outward* word or bare letter is the *court* ; but the holy covenant and priesthood of Faith is the *TEMPLE OF GOD*, wherein he gives power to those witnesses to prophecy, and this Reason will tread under foot.

After this, when the Virgin Daughter has worked the works of Faith and prophesied of *Christ to come*, then she is found *worthy* by Christ, and this *spirit* or *virgin* of Faith, who for salvation is become the essential soul of man, (then) to it in God's time the *Voice* comes from Heaven, and calls it up before the *Justice of the Father*, which is a great *Woe* for the soul of man to pass ! For he cannot go back ; indeed he may look back from whence he

he came, but them *waters are turned into blood*, and the *powers of this Heaven shaken*, as I have said, and no more life is to be found there in this condition of soul, for here you are held fast, and *death and hell* is ready to swallow you up; so through this justice you must go or no life eternal! NOW here the soul not only *wallow*, but is within himself *lost* in his own blood, and in this very condition you *eat the flesh and drink the blood of Christ*, because this work HE himself did in *human nature* under the justice of the Father; and in this trouble and distress the *Virgin Daughter* prays, and *commends herself into the hands of GOD* under the justice of the Father, then after this *appear the sign of the man*, JESUS in the HIGH HEAVENLY GLORY OF MERCY, and he comes and unites with this *pure Virgin* in spiritual and holy marriage under the justice of the Father; and when *his* holy spirit is united with this *Virgin of Faith*, he begets to himself a spiritual son born of this virgin daughter from under the justice of the Father, for his own royal and glorious kingdom of mercy: So when the Elect has worked the works of Faith to the ultimate of their power, then Christ *comes* in upon their works, and makes them *perfect*: ALSO when this spiritual son is born from under the justice of the Father, he is taken up into an high *mountain* of Faith in regeneration, where he see Christ in great power and great glory, for Christ only has the *seal* of God for eternal glory; and not only so, but *sits at the right hand of them that are sealed*; then this spiritual born son of Faith offers his prayer before the *grand ALTER of Faith*; which is at the feet of JESUS, for HE only has *power* over justice, and sin, and death, and hell, and those are the *four horns of the golden Altar of Faith*.

In this condition, the spiritual born son of the *Virgin Daughter of Faith*, see and know that *CHRIST* only has all power in his own kingdom of mercy; and *HE* only *can seal* the soul for eternal glory; also see them that are *sealed*, and himself not sealed: Now this is the last great
Woe

Woe to the Elect, because he see them that are sealed and himself left out,—then by *Christ the KING of Faith and mercy* he must be sealed in and to his holy covenant of mercy, which is the *upper Heaven of Faith*, otherwise he cannot *inherit ETERNAL glory*: Therefore he will hang to the *feet of JESUS* in spirit, as the *point of a needle will to a magnet*, and offer his eager prayer, and there he must wait for the call which say, “*Come in hither,*” which is under the seal of Christ; and then he becomes united to Christ the *King of Faith, mercy, and salvation*, in his high *Covenant of mercy for salvation*, which is far above or beyond the justice of the Father; and this is the *SEAL of the living God* for eternal life, because he is sealed a son to Christ by regeneration; then all sorrow will cease, for the *kingdoms of this world is become the kingdoms of Christ* by regeneration; and the *kingdom of justice* is become the *kingdom of mercy*, which is the kingdom of Christ, and *HE will reign in great glory, for ever and ever!* Now here in this state; the soul has the *Assurance* of eternal life, and he utters the strong voice of Faith before the throne of mercy, in thanksgiving, and in prophecy of his own resurrection to eternal glory, then falls asleep in the bed of mercy, which is the *Paradise with CHRIST*.

AGAIN, when the spiritual born son of the Virgin Daughter, (as aforesaid,) is ascended into the high mountain of Faith, sees the seal of Jesus, and them that are sealed for life eternal, offers the eager prayer of Faith at the feet of Jesus, who is the *great and GRAND ALTAR of Faith*, for the voice to come from Jesus that say, *come in hither*, i. e. into or under his *royal Seal* for eternal glory! But instead of that, he is sent back by Jesus the Angel of Faith and mercy, to tell his *Brethren the Elect* what he has seen in *Heaven*: Now such a man as this is a *Messenger of JESUS*, because he is spiritually born of the Virgin daughter of Faith to Jesus, and come out in prayer from the *feet of Jesus*, which is the *grand Altar of Faith*, and is as son of Jesus by or according to regenera-

regeneration, because he is born of the pure *VIRGIN* of *Faith*, that has become a *BRIDE* to *JESUS*; and he will and do declare the *SPIRITUAL GENERATION* or regeneration of *CHRIST*, i. e. the birth of the *Virgin Daughter* and her works of *Faith*, the holy marriage, spiritual birth, sanctification and seal of *Christ* the *ANGEL* of *Faith*, for to enter the kingdom of glory! which will shortly come to pass:—*ALSO*, as *John Baptist* came out at the ending of the law to prepare the way of *Christ's* coming in flesh to bring in the holy gospel; he came out in the spirit of them, who in the days of old, and time of the law, after their heavy travail through justice, were translated for the mercy of the *SON*, then could truly say, "Here *Christ* is coming, and he is even at the "door," for they only waited for the call, "come in "hither," which is under the mercy of the *Son*; and this spirit *John* came out in as near as could be, to prepare the way of *Christ* to appear in flesh, which is the cause of *John*, being called a great prophet: Yet *John* is said to come in the spirit and power of *Elias*, which is in the spirit of him, or them, who sit in justice;—But this spiritual born *Son* of the *Virgin daughter* of *Faith*, is born to *JESUS* for his royal covenant of mercy; and sent back by *Jesus*; and he comes forth in the spirit and power of *Jesus*, to declare the spiritual generation of *Christ*, and the mighty works of *Faith*, to enter the kingdom of glory; and stand, and prophecies before *Jesus*, in the upper Heaven of *Faith*, i. e. under the mercy of the *SON*.

C H A P. XXIX.

MOREOVER, GOD made the man *Adam* in creation, for natural generation, who is the first man *Adam*, and *Christ* was the second man *Adam*, and for regeneration;
and

and the *spiritual son* of the Virgin Daughter, is the *third Adam*, because he is *in* regeneration, for he is born to Christ, or re-made by Christ himself, in his holy covenant of mercy! Also as *John Baptist* came in the spirit and power of *Elias*, to prepare the way of CHRIST to come in flesh, (which is under the justice of the Father) even so do the *spiritual born son* of the Virgin daughter, come out in the spirit and power of *Christ* to prepare the way of HIS coming to the Elect, in full power and great glory, and to put an end to all time.

Further, when Jesus speak of John the Baptist (Mat. xi.) "But what went ye out to see, a *prophet*? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet:" And John's being *more than a prophet* is as I said, he came out in the spirit of them, who were *translated* to under or for the mercy of the son, and as so were prepared to meet him: For when the soul prophecies of Christ to come, yet he must be *translated*, which is preparing the way to meet HIM; for he who prophecies of Christ to come, is a *prophet*; but to be *translated* for Christ, is *more* than the prophecy of him to *come*, why? because then, there is another *Seal opened* to the soul, and the voice from Heaven sound higher up, which say, "*Here Christ is come*," which state, John the Baptist come out in as near as could be, knowing he was to declare the appearance of Christ in a body of flesh—this is why John was *more than a prophet*: And Jesus said, "Verily, I say unto you among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist, notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of Heaven is greater than He:" Therefore from this the Elect may see *John the Baptist* was very great, yet *he that is least in the kingdom of Heaven is greater than he*, because John came out in the *spirit and power of Elias*, (i. e. in the *spirit and power* of him or them who sit in the glory of the Father,) to prepare the way of CHRIST's sudden appearing in flesh under the

the justice of the Father, to work the great *Works* of Faith and redemption, bring in the holy gospel, make good his holy covenant according to his royal promise, also ascend into Heaven, not only to make good the *mansions* to them translated at death to under his divine mercy in days of *old*, but also to prepare *mansions* for his Elect in *His OWN* royal Covenant of grace and mercy. NOW the *kingdom of Heaven* is under the declaration of the Gospel, and to be found no where but in the royal priesthood of Faith! there the *daughter* of Faith will receive the *Testimony of JESUS from Heaven*, i. e. the spirit of prophecy of her own salvation: Also Jesus said, "Except a man be born of water, and of spirit he cannot enter the kingdom of God," i. e. the *Virgin Daughter* must be *born* to the royal priesthood, and works of Faith, under the justice of the *Father*, which is of *WATER*; —then, of her the spiritual *Son is born to CHRIST*, which is of *SPIRIT*, and for the kingdom of God, or of Heaven; then taken up to the *feet of Jesus*, see the *kingdom of Heaven* and them that are *sealed*; then sent back from the *ALTAR*, to tell his brethren the Elect, what he has seen, and what will soon come to pass: Now he that is so born of the *Virgin* daughter of Faith, and sent back from the feet of Jesus, is *LEAST* in the *kingdom of Heaven*, why? Because he is *born* for it, or to it, but not *sealed*; and he or they that are sealed, is *greater* than him that is born and not sealed, for they that are sealed sleep under the *ALTAR*, and all sorrow ceased: SO the spiritual born Son of the *Virgin* daughter, that is sent back by JESUS, is *least in the kingdom of Heaven*, yet greater than John the Baptist, because he is sent by Jesus in his holy covenant of mercy, and in the *spirit and power of CHRIST*: ALSO he comes out in the *spirit* of them that are spiritually born of the pure *Virgin* to Jesus, in his holy covenant of mercy, under his holy gospel, and offers the prayer as the *feet of Jesus*, for the voice which saith, "come in hither," Yet he is *least* in the *kingdom of Heaven*, as they are all sealed and sleep in

the bed of mercy, and he sent back in the spirit and power of Christ to declare HIS royal Will, and that HE will soon appear in glory, yet he must be sealed by Jesus as his brethren are, so of consequence the *least in the kingdom of Heaven*: Now here the Elect may see in what *spirit and power* John the Baptist came in, to *prepare the way* of Christ's coming in flesh; and what spirit and power the *spiritual Son* came in to prepare the way of HIS coming in *Glory*; and how the *kingdom of Heaven* is invaded in those our days, as it was in their days; and *Blessed* are them that understand, and enter the royal priesthood, then Christ take them into his own kingdom of mercy and glory.

AGAIN, Jesus said, (John xiv.) "In my Father's house are many mansions, if it were not so I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you;" Now as the *Virgin daughter* is born to the priesthood and works of Faith, and must work under the justice of the *Father* as Christ Jesus himself did, and will go into and through the *mansions of the Father*, or under the justice of the *Father* to the *mansions or place prepared* by the mercy of the SON; and also them that are sent forth by Jesus, inspired under the holy Gospel as were the *Apostles* at the day of *Pentecost*, yet they were under the justice of the *Father*, and the *comforter* came from Jesus by the way or through that justice; for all must be done according to *John's visional book of prophecy*; and when regenerated Faith has *overcome*, according to the prophecy of that book, he will be born in spirit, which will be at the time, or in the days of the voice of the *sixth Angel*; and when the *spiritual son* is born to JESUS, in HIS high, royal, and spiritual *Covenant* of grace and mercy, he may be *sent back* immediately from JESUS in his HIS own spiritual and royal covenant, (but not till then,) and this *spiritual born son* will declare the *BIRTH* of the *Virgin Daughter*, her *spiritual PROMISE* of Christ, her works of Faith, to *OVERCOME*, her prophecy of *CHRIST* to come, and the holy *MARRIAGE*; (which,

is done by the *Way* or through the justice of the *Father*, in, and by the mystical *union* and spiritual *communion* with CHRIST in the royal priesthood of Faith,) and the spiritual *BIRTH, SANCTIFICATION, and SEAL* of Christ the king of Faith; (then the soul is made compleat by regeneration for the *kingdom of Heaven*;) those are the *mansions* or *places* that Christ went before to prepare for his Elect, in his own kingdom of *Mercy*; because by the divine assistance of CHRIST from Heaven, the Virgin Daughter is brought through *justice* to HIS own kingdom of *Mercy*, then, every man's works of Faith will be recorded with himself in the BOOK OF LIFE!

Yea, concerning the *Virgin* daughter of Faith, or *Witnesses* of the spirit in the *neither Heaven* of Faith; One stood before the throne of God and prophesied when he was in the condition of the Father, and the other now he is in the condition of the Son, which is done in the royal priesthood of Faith: So John's *revelation* (Ch. xv.) "And I saw as it were a sea of glass, mingled with fire: And them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God:" This *sea of glass* is the royal priesthood or waters of Faith, and is like unto a *crystal sea* because there is found the holy and spiritual teachings of JESUS, which proceeds from Heaven to assist the *Virgin* to work the works of Faith before the *Throne*; for the royal Works and incense of Faith is before the *throne of God* as a *crystal sea* or a *sea of glass*, for there the soul work the works of Faith, and at times is made able to see through justice, even to the *Mercy of JESUS*, by the heavenly enlightenings which he receive from the throne of Heaven, which is *clear as crystal*, and on this the *Virgin of Faith* stand: But this *sea of glass* is mingled with fire, and this fire is the justice and wrath of God; for as Faith fell under justice the vials of God's wrath is poured out on the soul of man,

that the *Virgin* daughter may be brought through the *mansions* of the *Father*, which is of *justice*, to the glorious mansions of the SON which is *Mercy*: And *those that has gotten* the victory over the beast, are them in whom the *Virgin* of Faith is born from its womb or seed, then there is another *Life* in man, distinct to that of Reason which is the *beast*, and to this *Life* of Faith is given the promise of Christ to *come*; and *over his image*, is *over* the goings out of Reason, in his acts, imaginations, &c. for wherever Reason only actuates the soul of man, that man is the *image of the beast*: And *over his mark*, is *over* the firey *Zeal* he pours forth in wrath, (to have his own will, and do his own way,) and the *seal* of the internal angel; and *over* the power he has, or may receive from the *beast* to act by: *And over the number of his name* is *over* his temptation, blasphemy, visions, revelations, and prophecy, his declaration, insence, judgments, actions, and desires to act, also his inheritance and desires to inherit or accomplish by his designs; his wisdom, shifts, turns, excuses, &c. to support his own kingdom; now in those things is *known the number of his name*, and this is the *NUMBER of his Name*, which is very great, ought to be many ways *known* for his *Name* is blasphemy, and the *Number* of his name is his evils and temptations; THEREFORE when the *Virgin* of Faith is born she is taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, which is the *sea of glass*, and there the soul will be brought through and *overcome* those things; and to the *Virgin* of Faith is given the spirit of prophecy, and she will prophecy under the justice of the *Father* of CHRIST to *come*, which is done at the time or in the days of the voice of the *fifth Angel*, and be made able to *stand on this sea of glass, having the harps of God*, which is the voice of Faith, in declaration, prophecy, prayer, and thanksgivings before the *Throne*: For this *understand* whenever the *Virgin Daughter* is born, it is for the *Son of God*, HE will not *leave* that soul, but in his own time will convert it to his own likeness.

Again,

Again, (Ver. 3.) “ And they sung the song of *Moses* the servant of God and the song of the *Lamb*, saying, “ great and marvellous are thy works, LORD GOD “ ALMIGHTY, just and true are thy ways thou “ *KING of Saints* :” Now the *song of Moses* that was sung on this *sea of glass*, was by them that in the days of old, and in the time of the law, that the *Virgin Daughter* was born and taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, and prophecy of *CHRIST to come*, when HE was in the condition of God the Father, which is of justice, and by the divine assistance of God’s holy spirit from *Heaven*, to help the *Virgin* for the coming of Christ ; and this is the waters of Faith like unto *crystal*, because by this divine light the soul at times, is made able to see through justice, up to the mercy of the SON : And it being mingled with fire, is because through the *kingdom of justice* you must go to the *kingdom of mercy* : Now the *song of Moses* is on the one part for a temporal blessing or deliverance, and this the spirit of Reason can sing, as the Israelites of old did, when the Egyptians were drowned in the sea, or when God’s justice was stayed on them, according to the priesthood that *Moses* gave forth with the law : But when *Joshua* was to have the charge of the people, then, (see the song of *Moses*, Deut. xxiii.) “ When the most high divided to the nations their inheritance ; when he separated the sons of Adam ; for “ the Lord’s portion is his people : Jacob is the lot of “ his inheritance : And also how he found Jacob in the “ wilderness, led him, and instructed him, and kept “ him as the apple of his eye : (Ver. 15.) But *Jeshurun* “ waxed fat, and kicked : Thou art waxed fat, thou “ art grown thick, thou art covered with fatness ; “ then he forsook God which made him, and lightly “ esteemed the rock of his salvation :” Now here *Moses* saw the difference between the *two kingdoms*, for the kingdom of God was in *Jacob*, which WAS and IS Faith ; but the kingdom of *Jeshurun* WAS and IS Reason : Also, although *Moses* was the anointed cherubim according

according to that inspiration, yet he was taken into the royal priesthood of Faith, and wrote concerning Christ.

Although, when Moses wrote the law, and to the Israelites concerning it, and of God's temporal deliverance; preservation, and prosperity to them, if they did but obey those commands *there*, his prophecy of Christ may not appear so plain, as in some other prophets; but this is to be understood, GOD made known to Moses the works of HIS creation, with its consequence, and that the man Adam's *Life* was of God's own nature, the *Law*, given to Adam, his *fall* for breaking that Law, the *promise* of Christ to come to bring life out of that death, the *Garden* of Faith in which God *walks* for regeneration, and the *quickenings* power to Faith for regeneration: Also of the *serpent* who was the fallen *Angel*, of his being a *tempter* and did tempt, the *curse* pronounced on him, and of the *two seeds* that was become to two generations and Kingdoms; the *birth* of Cain and that he was a murderer, his being before the *cherubim* and *flaming sword*, or internal *Angel* in justice whom Cain called *Lord*, his being *loosed*, *cast out*; and kept from the *tree of life*, his wandering *condition*, and genealogy;—The genealogy of *Adam*, (then the kingdoms and priest-hoods were *divided*,) the *nature* of Faith and of Reason, that God *walked with Enoch*, and his translation into Heaven; the *mystical union* and spiritual *communion*, the fathers of old had with God of the coming of Christ; their promise, prophecies, incense and works of Faith, in that royal priesthood; that the kingdom of *Faith* is the *inheritance* of Christ, which is of mercy, and the kingdom of *Jeshurun* is the *inheritance* of Reason, which is of justice: So Moses had great knowledge given of God, and of the coming of Christ; and that God drowned the world through the wickedness of man in *Noah's days*; yet, he wrote of the fathers of old being in mystical union, and spiritual communion with God, concerning the *redemption*, because he was taken into the priesthood
of

of Faith as they were, and prophesied of Christ as they did, and the first *man of God* that in public declared the creation, and brought up the genealogy of Faith, and of Reason unto his days; now all those things was given to Moses by the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN; therefore a greater than Moses *was not*, and is not to be found among the prophets in the time of the law: But I would have the Elect observe, where he write and stand as a *Lawgiver* to Reason, and where he write and stand in the *royal compact*, and *priesthood* of Faith.

AGAIN, when the LORD GOD said unto Moses, "Thy days approach that thou must die, call *Joshua* that I may give him charge," *then* Moses was delivered from Reason, its law, and justice of that law: And *Moses sung this song* of deliverance, and gave thanks on this *sea of glass* which is before the THRONE, for this deliverance; for *then* Moses would be taken into the *royal priesthood* of Faith, and not go out any more: *There* he was translated (under the justice of the Father) to the *Glory of the Father*; and when time ends, he *WILL BE* again translated to the mercy and *Glory of the SON*: This is the *Song of Moses*, that the Elect of old, and in the time of the law did sing; for the *Virgin* in them was born; were in the royal priesthood of Faith, prophesied of *Christ to come*, and *was translated* under the power of the *Father* for the mercy and glory of the SON: Which *Virgin* is one of the *Witnesses of his spirit* or *olive-trees*, that stood before the throne and prophesied, when HE WAS in the condition of the Father, and has the *Father's name* written in their forehead, for the *Seal of the SON*: The other witness of his spirit or *olive-tree*, is the *Virgin* that stand, with thanksgiving for their deliverance, and divine assistance, and *prophecy before the Throne* now HE IS in the condition of the SON: This is the *song of Moses*, and the *song of the Lamb*, that is sung on this *sea of glass*, in this nether *Heaven* of Faith.

Further, the spiritual song of *Moses*, it is to pass the justice of the Angel, or *cherubim and flaming sword*,
(justice

(justice to Reason) to the justice of the Father, which is justice to Faith:—Also to be *translated* under that justice, to that Glory, for the *Glory of the Father*, is the head, height, or power of that justice, and is the height of the *song of Moses*, because Moses was translated to that *Glory*, in Heaven above, and is *ready* for translation to the *Mercy and Glory of the SON* at the glorious *Resurrection* to life eternal: Also the Elect of old, and in the time of the law, and until Christ ascended into his glorious kingdom and covenant of mercy, *they*, were all translated at their death under the power of the *Father*, for the mercy and glory of the Son; then the *Virgin daughter* of Faith became united to GOD for CHRIST; and those are them that were *bated or slain* by the spirit of Reason, for the *word of God*, and the *testimony* they held, and do sleep under the *ALTAR of Faith*: SO in the priesthood of Faith, in days of old, the Virgin daughter saw the days of Christ and rejoiced; and would have much more rejoiced to have brought forth a *spiritual son* to Christ in regeneration, as it was then known, that would come to pass, but not until the God of *Justice* became the God of *Mercy*: Then as I said, they were united to God for Christ, and passed to the head of justice, or the *Power* of the Father, for the mercy and union of the Son:—This is the ultimate of the *song of Moses*, even in Heaven above; but here, the *Virgin* of Faith could not bring forth a spiritual son to Christ, why? because the works of redemption was not then done.

C H A P. XXX.

MOREOVER, when Jesus had worked the works of redemption, ascended into his own covenant or high heaven of Mercy, then he took possession of his *glorious NEW Kingdom*

kingdom which he had gained to himself, i. e. to possess the grand union, or be united to or with the *Virgin daughter* of regenerated Faith, that was before united to God, for the Mercy and glory of Christ; for then he was become Christ the God of mercy, according to the *Faith and prophecy* of the pure *Virgin*; and had power to loose the *Seal* of the Father which is of justice, and put his own ROYAL SEAL which is mercy; (see Rev iv.)

“ John saw a throne was set in Heaven, and one sat on
 “ the throne, and round and about the throne were
 “ twenty-four elders sitting clothed in white, and had
 “ on their heads crowns of gold, and out of the throne,
 “ proceeded lightnings, and thunders, and voices,
 “ and there were seven lamps of fire, which are the seven
 “ spirits of God.” Now those *seven spirits of God*, goeth out on the womb and daughter of Faith, for regeneration, redemption, and salvation: “ And before
 “ the throne there was a sea of glass like unto chrystal:
 “ And in the midst of the throne, and round about the
 “ throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and be-
 “ hind:” Now the *sea of glass like unto chrystal*, is here spoke without being mingled with fire, because those that *was* there had passed through the justice of the *Father*, to that *Glory*, and were united to God for Christ, so they had not the *firey wrath* to go through; for *they* had passed to the height of the glory and power of the *Father* relative to regeneration: And in all this great and glorious *Vision* John saw in this place, there was but *one*, had passed to the power and glory of mercy, which was HIM *that sat on the throne* and had a *rainbow round and about*; this *rainbow* is round the throne of Mercy on which *CHRIST sitteth*, and it shew forth that God has redeemed his *Elect*, according to his royal covenant made with *them*, and that he will *seal* them, *raise* them, and *translate* them, to his own kingdom of mercy and glory: And as this *spiritual rainbow*, belong only to regeneration, redemption, and salvation, it cannot be *seen* or *known*, but in the royal priesthood of Faith, it being

the transcendant glorious mercy of CHRIST to his Elect. THOSE *four beast* that are in the *midst, and round about the throne,* are *Enoch, Moses, Elias, and Jesus,* for the *three* first were *translated* to the throne and glory of the Father, when God was in the condition of the *Father*:— THEREFORE where Enoch, Moses, and Elias was translated to, GOD himself came from, to become a true *Son* to the *Power* of the Father, to become the God of mercy; and no one in *Heaven* or *Earth* was or could be found, but Jesus only, that could keep the law of Faith, and go through the justice of the Father, to work the works of redemption, which was done before the *Throne of the Father*; and in this *HE gave that honour, glory, and thanksgiving before the throne of the Father* which no one but himself could do; and is ascended into HIS heavenly and glorious *Throne of Mercy*, and is *Him*, among the *four beast* that has the *face of a man*; because *HE has faced, gone through, overcome, and conquered* the power of Reason, of Sin, of Death, of Hell, and of Justice, and has gained to himself the glorious throne of mercy; then,—by this, of consequence *HE has the face of a man*, therefore HE has the RULE over his whole kingdom of regenerated Faith: And the other three which has the likeness of a *Lion*, and of a *Calf*, and of a *flying eagle* is Moses, Elias, and Enoch, for they have all *passed* the angel in justice, which is angel to Reason, and are *translated* to the glory of the Father; then sang the *song of Moses* and sit in the power and glory of the Father unto this day, i. e. in the power and glory of justice: And the *spirit* call them by this *likeness*; as of a *Lion*, is the strong ruling power of the glory of justice; of a *flying eagle*, is the quick eye, and swift motion in that power; of a *calf*, is that it is done by the nature of *regenerated Faith*, that was *regenerated from the earth, and from among men*, with a power invested by the LORD GOD of Faith and regeneration: And though those men are glorified in Heaven above, and are full of Faith

Faith and glory; yet, the *Throne* and *Glory* of mercy, which is of the SON, so much transcends that of justice, which is of the *Father*, that the *Spirit* do not admit any created and regenerated being of Faith, truly to have the *face of a man*, until they have passed through all *powers*, and from all *powers* that shall keep the man from the *Glory* and merciful *Throne* of the SON; then they will be made according to his own likeness; *then* truly and compleatly will have *the face of a man*, by the power of Faith in regeneration and salvation; and live and reign with Christ in the *Glory of Mercy* for ever and ever, Amen.

Again, those *beast are full of eyes before and behind*: Now those *eyes* are Faith, and its quick properties, and the true knowledge and experience in the works and fruits of Faith, the spirit of prophecy, the power of God, and his divine wisdom: As first God created all things, and in that he knew all things, and their power; and that Faith fell under the power of death and hell, for hearkening to Reason, and that it would cost the *godbeast* life that created it, to redeem it: Also that Reason is cast out, and kept from the *Tree of Life*, i. e. the mercy of the SON, by the *cherubim and flaming sword*, i. e. the internal angel in justice: ALSO when God became man to redeem HE was under the justice of the Father, and well knew the voice of Faith, from the voice of Reason, the priesthood of Faith, from that of Reason; and the mighty works of *patience*, and of *Faith* to overcome; for through the power and *scourge* of Reason, and of justice, sin, death, and hell HE went, and *overcome*; then left all those powers behind, and is ascended into his *high Heaven* of mercy: So as JESUS has gone through those powers, and left them all behind him, there is no one in Heaven or earth, knows more of those *powers*, where, and when, to *assist* his royal Elect under them, to bring *them* through those powers to his glory of mercy; and in this HE is *full of eyes behind*: Also Jesus has great *prophecy*, that his royal

Elect will inherit crowns of glory, in his glorious kingdom of mercy; and no one but HIM has power to raise them to that glory; nor is there any one *knows* like unto JESUS, the great *glory*, grand *Union*, powerful and *holy communion*, the *KINGDOM* of *FAITH* will have, when it is raised to its glorious fruition; and in this *HE is full of eyes before*, as well as behind. NOW *Enoch, Moses, and Elias* have also, *eyes before and behind*; for they have born a body of flesh on this earth, and were under the internal angel in justice, and well *know* the power of God, over Reason: Also they know the power of God in the priesthood of Faith, and the works and fruits of Faith in that royal priesthood, with the spirit of prophecy (in this *sorrowful Vale* of death) of *Christ to come*; and what it is to *pass* the angel in justice to the justice of the *Father*, and through that justice to the *glory of the Father*, so in this *they are full of eyes behind*, because they well know the *power of God*, to bring the *Virgin* of Faith through those things, and the hard *travail* to come through those powers: Further they now sit in the *glory of the Father*, and have *power* over those powers: Also JESUS now sit on the *Throne of mercy*; and they have strong prophecy HE will open that kingdom of glory to his Elect, and of the crowns of glory they will have and enjoy in that glorious kingdom; and in this *they are full of eyes before*: Because the Lord God of Heaven has gained to himself this kingdom of mercy and glory for his Elect, therefore they give all honour, praise, glory, and thanksgiving before the throne, and are *full of eyes before and behind*, because they live, and their life is Faith regenerated.

Also those *four beast* had each of them *six wings*: Now those *wings* is the *POWER* of Faith to ascend or descend, and its strong inspiration and revelation; as thus, the *LORD GOD* of Heaven had power to *trasmute* himself, into his own created nature of Adam, which was *human*, animated with Faith in a fallen state, so become man; go *through* the power of Reason, and never hearken to it, to fall under the power of its temptation:

tation : Again, HE had power to go through the *justice* of the Father, which was to lose himself in his own blood in death under that justice, and *quicken* out of that death into a new life for mercy : After this, HE had power to ascend into his high Heaven of mercy ; and take *possession* ; and full power *in and over* his royal kingdom of regenerated Faith :—Those are the *six wings*, which belong to HIM that hath the *face of a man* ; i. e. Power, to become man, and keep the law of Faith ; Power to go through the justice of the Father to redeem his Elect ; and power to take possession of his new and glorious kingdom of mercy, which HE had gained ; which is power to seal his Elect in his royal *covenant* of mercy, and power to raise and translate them to the *Glory* of his mercy ! Now I would the Elect *understand*, those *Wings* are made use of, in the royal priesthood and compact of Faith, for regeneration, redemption, and salvation :—THEREFORE the other three have their *Wings* ; as *first*, Elect men are born into this world under the power of the angel of Reason, and subjected to that power ; but when the voice of God comes to fallen Faith, it quickens a new life out of that death which is the *Virgin* daughter of Faith born for regeneration, and to her comes the promise of Christ, and she will work the works of Faith and prophecy ; but the soul is incumbered with the angel of Reason, until the voice of God comes to Faith and calls the soul from under this angel in justice ; and when this comes to pass, Faith has *wings to flee* from under that power, as *Moses* and others did : *Again*, when the Elect are called to the power and glory of the Father, or spiritual birth, Faith has also *wings to flee* thither : *Moreover* when Faith is called to the *Seal* of the LIV-ING GOD, resurrection, and translation to eternal life, in the glory of mercy with Christ, Faith has *wings to flee* there ; and those are the *wings*, *Enoch*, *Moses*, and *Elias* have ; and not them only, but all the Elect in *regeneration* : i. e. Faith, when in regeneration is called, it has power to *flee* from, or pass the angel in justice ; also when called
before

before the justice of the Father, it has power or *wings* to flee through that justice to that glory, or bring forth a spiritual son to the Seal of Christ: Again, when Faith is called to the glory and mercy of the SON, it has also *wings* or power to flee there; and those are the true *wings* of Faith, that *John* saw the four beast (which are in Heaven above) had.

Again, "those *beast* are full of eyes *within*:" Now those *eyes* is the power and *quick sight* of Faith; as first, when God was in the *glory of the Father*, He had power and divine wisdom to quicken Faith from death to life, and gather it up to his own glory for the mercy and glory of that *Kingdom*, which he would gain to himself by his becoming a SON to redeem his Elect: Also when JESUS was on this earth in a body of flesh, HE never fell into temptation, for HIS *quick eye* of Faith always knew the tempter, let him appear in what manner, form, or condition soever, as HE well knew the *mark*, and the *number* of the tempter: Also the *Virgin* daughter of Faith when active, never will hearken to Reason; true it is, when the *Virgin* is inactive, and Reason the tempter has power over the being, then the soul may, nay, is tempted to sin; but this I advise you, first look at your tempter, and see what good he ever has, or can do for himself, and how he can protect himself from the wrath of God; for in all his out goings, it is in self-flattery, on or after things which must perish with himself: But you will much oblige Reason, to let him tempt you that he may rule over you, and lead you under the seal of the angel that you may perish with him; (for any thing you then know to the contrary;) so I would have no one be afraid to affront his tempter;—but as Faith grows strong, it refine the man, then the *eye* of Faith become *quick within to WATCH* the tempter, and will know him, refuse, and repulse him; for when Faith is rose from death to life, it has *eyes* given it from Heaven, to see the power of redemption, regeneration, and salvation; and will work the works of Faith, and WORSHIP
GOD

GOD, and are found worthy; then from Heaven is given the spirit of prophecy of Christ to come, which is a further *sight*, or *eyes*, to see the mighty power, works, and judgments of God, and *Moses* and *Elias* was *true*, in and under the cherubical inspiration, and *Enoch*, *Moses*, and *Elias* was also *true*, in or under the inspiration of Faith, and as so, was *faithful and true* in all the *household* of God; (and *HE* came and found them so, then translated them into *Heaven*, and made them *rulers over his whole household*, in justice;) and it is by this *quick sight*, and power invested, they have the true wisdom in the good *rule*, in God's *household* in justice which is the *eye* or *eyes* of regenerated Faith likened unto a *calf* because of its pure innocent nature: And it is by the *eye* or *eyes* of Faith in CHRIST, that HE see and rule over his whole *household* of regenerated Faith and mercy; and is likened unto a *Lamb*, because he is *LORD* and *KING* in and over his whole Household of regenerated Faith, mercy and *Glory*, and of the resurrection and translation to the *high Glory* of mercy: Now here the Elect may see the mighty power and glory of Faith in Heaven above; but *understand*, them that possess it, has worked the works in the royal priesthood or its nether *Heaven* on this *earth*, because Faith fell on this *earth*, and in a body of this *earth*; and the acting powers of temptation, sin, justice, and death, is also *here*; so the Elect in regeneration has the *eyes* of Faith *within* to watch the temper, and work the works to *follow Christ* through those powers, and all the *fields*, *kingdoms*, and powers of fallen Reason, to *inherit his Kingdom and CROWN of MERCY*; for all the works of Faith is in regeneration to enter the glorious kingdom of Christ, and is done on this *earth* in a body of flesh: So it is by those *eyes of Faith within*, that the Elect WATCH the tempter, and also the *coming* of Christ; and BLESSED are them that are so found by HIM when he comes in spirit; then he gave them the spirit of prophecy, that he will come again to them in holy marriage, and also give them *wisdom* in this nether heaven
of

of Faith, and make them *rulers over* the whole powers of Reason which are under justice, because according to their *Faith* in regeneration and *prophecy*, Reason is *left* and will be judged.

Yea, Faith in regeneration has *wings* to flee from one *mansion* or power to another when called; and also in prayer and thanksgiving, and by incense, (which is the flow, act, or life, of Faith, in the worship of God and Christ,) Faith by influence has *wings to flee* up to Heaven before the throne, and when *warned to flee* from evil.—Again, Faith, here in regeneration has *Eyes before and behind*, being *taken* from the house of Reason, and from its justice, and out of death; and it *see* and *know* from whence it was *taken*, and from whence it came; so it has no manner of desire to return back to the old House, but will look forward and *see* no one can enter the kingdom of Christ without *regeneration*, and *works* of Faith, to *follow* Christ; So by those Eyes *before* it will work the works of Faith, and press forward for the *House of CHRIST*, i. e. the kingdom of Faith, mercy, and life that HE has made anew for his Elect: And by those Eyes *behind* will see the *ruination* of Reason, and not return back to the *old house*, which is the kingdom of Reason, justice, and death: So the power of regeneration is very great, for what is *regenerated* is the very *nature GOD took on him*, to become CHRIST and redeem!

Ver. 8. “And the four beast rest not day and night, saying, Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty; which WAS, and IS, and IS TO COME.” This is the voice of Faith *in* regeneration, and *of* regenerated Faith:—For GOD created both heaven and earth, the sea and all things therein, and they was created for his glory; and has manifested himself both in heaven and earth, and IS *to come to put an end to time*, and bring in *eternity*: Also it was God that created Faith, and it is God that redeemed Faith, and is *yet to come* to its assistance; also HE was God the *Father*, and is now become God the SON, and *elder Brother* in the holy Gospel;

Gospel ; also HE WAS the God of justice to Faith, and IS NOW become the God of mercy to Faith ; also HE WAS the Father of *created* Faith, and IS NOW become the Father of *regenerated* Faith, and is yet to *come* to make it compleat : Again, it is CHRIST that raise Faith from death to life for regeneration ; and it is HIM that give the *Virgin* daughter of Faith the spirit of prophecy ; and is yet to come to her in holy marriage ; so HE WAS *the first resurrection* to fallen Faith, and is HIM that assist the Virgin Daughter to go through the powers of *Reason, sin, death, hell, and justice*, and is yet to *come* with the *second resurrection* to life eternal, therefore when the *Virgin* is born and taken into the royal priesthood, Christ is yet to come to her ; for in the travail through this great *wilderness* Christ *is to come* to her assistance, to go through and *overcome* the powers of hell and death, and the removal of internal *mountains*, give the spirit of prophecy, unite with her in holy marriage, to seal and sanctify the spiritual born son ; for it *was* the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN who put himself under those powers, and it is HIM that has gone through and *overcome* those powers ; and IS *to come* to assist and bring the *Elect* through those powers : So throughout the whole *Heaven* of Faith in and for regeneration, *Christ is yet to come* :—For although *Enoch, Moses, and Elias* are glorified in heaven above, and their life is regenerated Faith, yet they sit in the glory of justice, and CHRIST is yet to *come* to translate them to HIS own kingdom the *Glory of mercy* ; which will be done at the glorious *Resurrection*, glorification and coronation of his royal Elect, to make his royal kingdom of regenerated Faith compleat : Therefore Christ was the *creator* and *fountain* of Faith, and it is HIM who has *overcome* and made all things *anew* for his Elect, and is yet to *come* to make them *compleat* ; and take them into his everlasting kingdom the glory of mercy : And the prayer of Faith in the royal priesthood is for Christ to *come* to its assistance : And this is the

Voice of Faith in regeneration, and of regenerated Faith in its Heavens, Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty, which WAS, and IS, and IS TO COME.

Again (the voice of the Seraphic host I have declared in my *Book of the Law, Chap. X.* for they stand as they were first created ; but the cherubim fell into generation ; also declared their voice and acts, *Chap. IX. and in Ezekiel's vision in that book :*) Now as the cherubim fell into generation, the footing on which they stand is split asunder, because them that die in childhood, and the natural idiot will be raised cherubims to glory, to compose that heavenly host or glorious order in heaven above ; and they will utter their *Voice* of salvation in the glorious morning of the resurrection, and continue it in all eternity ; but them who live to manhood the angel take place in the soul, and they must go their way according to infinite justice :—there is the law and given priesthood remain as their inheritance ; and the flow of blessing : But as they have the letter of the gospel, they form the salvation of Christ according to their own liking, and imitate the child or cherubim in *voice* and language, yet cannot die a child nor inherit that kingdom : And *many* go forth and teach their *Way* of salvation by their eager *Zeal*, which is the *daughter* of Reason ; but when a Messenger of God come and utter his voice, it puts this *daughter* into great agitation, and either drive her at a distance, and may catch what she can by way of transformation ; or bring forth the spiritual *son of perdition*, which come forth in wrath, blasphemy, persecution, &c. against the *Kingdom of CHRIST* : Now this is the voice or language of the dark cherubim, and Reason being manifest by its fruit.

Also when Elect man is born into this world, he has the cherubical state, kingdom, and powers to pass through, and when he come to manhood the angel take place in the soul ; then he is charged with the law, and must worship God according to that kingdom, power, and inspiration, to have that blessing : But there is the
kingdoms

kingdoms and powers of this world to take him, and kingdoms and powers of the dark spirit, and he must pass through those to the *kingdom of the Father*, i. e. when the *Virgin* daughter of Faith is born, and *taken* into the royal priesthood, then by this *Virgin daughter* and divine assistance from heaven, he must work the works of Faith, and *overcome* those kingdoms and powers; leave them behind, pass the justice of the angel, and go through the justice of the Father to the mercy of the SON : For as man is born into this world a child, and pass through a childhood state to manhood, even so must the Elect pass through those kingdoms and powers; for those who fall in the state of childhood, will be raised in the cherubical glorious kingdom; and them that fall in the kingdoms of this world, and of the dark spirit, will be raised under the *seal* of the angel in justice : And them who fall in the *kingdom of the Father*, will be raised in the glorious Kingdom of the SON.

Again, as the Elect of God are *scattered* about the whole world, and under the power of *nations and tongues where the Whore sitteth*; it may well be called *nations and tongues*, because of the *kingdoms of this world*, and of the *dark spirit*; all contend for their *kingdom*, i. e. their *Will and Way*; and all desire to build their *place of safety, or tower, up to heaven*, as is their own will and way; for they mean God to forgive all they please to do; now this is the *building of Babel* and confusion of tongues, which is become very great, for here the *whore sitteth*; and out from those *people, kindred, nations, and tongues*, are the Elect *redeemed* and regenerated; and this way is the *lost KINGDOM OF ISRAEL restored*, and gathered to CHRIST by regeneration, and *they* are of one kindred, kingdom, and tongue, i. e. the *Kingdom of CHRIST*; and their *voice* is of Faith in regeneration, and of regenerated Faith!—There is also the *voice* of the child or cherubim, and of the seraphims, and those are the *pure tongues* without confusion : For as created

Faith broke its own law, and *fell* under the power of Reason, justice, and death, then all things was made and become *new*, for the salvation of the Elect ; so HE who WAS and IS the God and Father of created Faith, has worked the works of God in and for Redemption, and is now become the God and Father of regenerated Faith ; and the mighty works of Faith to go through and overcome the said powers, is done on this earth, in a body of flesh, then the Elect are made anew, and become the *sons of God* in and according to regeneration : So, (Rev. xxi.) “ He that overcometh, shall “ inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall “ be my son : ” And as there is a *son* born in regeneration, and *sent back* to tell his tale, he has *sounded the Voice of the sixth Angel* in regeneration, in public on this earth, and *prepared the way of the SEVENTH* to sound in public, which will be done by *Christ the KING of Faith*, when he comes to compleat his *Kingdom* and put an *end to all time* ; for the *eleventh* hour is past, and the *twelfth* is come, which is *CHRIST's own hour*, or *time* to come in, and *judge the world* : But what year, month, week, day, or hour, according to man's accompt, the *son* in regeneration cannot tell, for that is known to the *Father* of regenerated Faith *only* ; because this world only stand for the sake of *HIS kingdom* to be made compleat ; so that is *not of the Son to know, but of the Father only* ; yet according to creation and fall of Faith, it is not of the *Father* but of the *Son* ; because God became a SON to his own power, and worked the *works of God* for redemption and regeneration, made all things anew, gained this great and mighty power to himself, and is the *Father* of regenerated Faith ; therefore *HE only knows* : But this know,—according to *Declaration,—Prophecy,—and Revelation, HIS Hour is come !!!* therefore *watch !* —

AGAIN, although the cherubim or serpent angel broke the *Law* he was created under, yet never could brake that
that

that *pure Justice*, so brought it here into generation, and it was sown into this *Earth*, as *pure* as God created it: Now *Moses* was the anointed cherubim according to that inspiration; for he was inspired in the power and purity of that *Law* and *justice*; and *walked on this Earth* in a body of flesh, and person of man, in the power and purity of that justice, as a *God and Lawgiver* to the seed of Reason: *Again*, Faith was sown into this *earth* in the man *Adam*, and brought on by generation; then the *Lord GOD of heaven* who created Faith, transmuted himself into earth or flesh, and took on him his own nature, which he created in Adam, and *walked on this earth* in a body of flesh, and person of man, in the mighty power and fulness of Faith; for HE kept the law of Faith, redeemed his Elect, and become the Lord God of regeneration. *Again*,—John the Baptist came out in the spirit of them who (in the days of old and time of the law) were *translated* to under the mercy of the SON, and united to *God for Christ*; and he came out in the spirit and power of Elias (for Elias was *translated* and united to God for Christ;) and in this *spirit* he *walked on this earth*, and declared the sudden appearance of Christ in a body of flesh to redeem his Elect, and bring in his holy gospel and kingdom. *Again*, the *spiritual born Son* of the *Virgin* daughter of Faith in regeneration, came out in the spirit of them, that the *Son were born*, and ascended into an high mountain of Faith in regeneration, and offer at the feet of JESUS for the voice which say *come in hither*; now in this *spirit* he came out, and in the spirit and power of Jesus; and in this *spirit and power* he *walks on this earth*, and has *sounded the voice of the SIXTH angel* in regeneration, and *prepared the way of the SEVENTH to sound*: Now *be that bath wisdom let him understand* those comings out and those comers out, then he will know the *time of the day*.

C H A P. XXXI.

MOREOVER concerning the mighty acts and power of **CHRIST** in regeneration, and of his coming to judgment; as in Matt. xxiv. "Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left:" This life and world is the *Field* for generation, where there is natural desire, bonds, union, and duty; and frail nature will have labour, trouble, anxiety, sorrow, and mourning; but at the same time, mind, not to be lost in those things, for the spirit of Reason will twine about, cleave to, and intermix his slime with your duty, then will desire and urge for that which cannot, or should not be done, and overload the soul, so that man will sink and be *lost*: But mind, *CHRIST* gather out of the *Field* by and for regeneration, and will have his own *kingdom*; so *strive* to enter into the royal priesthood of Faith to *worship God and Christ*, then you will know Moses, and your *burthen* be made more *light*; for into this *Field* there is a desire to go, and many fall into ruination, madness, self-murder, and many evils both of body and spirit. **ALSO**, there is the *Field* of wild Reason, where Reason has his delights to go out, and *walk to and fro the earth* in his *wild way*, seeking to excel each other by their arts and emulations; and to gather up riches, strive against, contend with, drive, and enslave each other, to become great and shine in their kingdom, as if they would have the creation and power of **GOD** to their liking, or form it anew; and delight in, and gather up the flowers and fruits of stupefaction and death, seeking to have their own will, and do their own way; also seeking each others commendation, good will, and name, by flattery and deceit to *devour* each other if possible, through a selfish view, oppression, malice, lies, &c. and tempt and drive each other into evil, through the fashions and ways of this life: Now thus the *spirit* of Reason *walk to and fro this earth,*

earth, in this his *Field*, and is *transformed into a priest* to excuse himself: So by drinking the dark waters, of the *great river Euphrates*, they excuse themselves by each others evil in what they can.

Also there is the *Field* of argument; *i. e.* to question and contend against the will, wisdom, and power of GOD: As, when a Messenger is sent from God to declare HIS *will and power*, Reason will come to tempt him, and question, contend, and seek to overthrow him, but cannot; then he will *walk to and fro* by his imagination, and enquire *by* the spirit of Reason, and *of* the *spirit* of Reason (which is the devil) then he will come from *walking to and fro*, to the Messenger to question and try again, but cannot prevail; and will go out to seek what evil he can concerning the Messenger, and judge of him according to his own evil spirit; because what evil is in himself, he thinks it, and would have it to be in the Messenger; and sets great value on himself for his wisdom, then the question is, Whether the Messenger is of GOD or not? or for why may not he be saved according to his former confidence? and why should God have *respect* to the Messenger and his *offering*, and *reject* him, for what evil has he done more than the Messenger? &c. Now whenever you see this you may be confidently sure, no *offering* has been accepted; and they have been *walking through dry places, seeking rest, but could find none*; then if left they will rise up in judgment and commit murder: For it was in this *Field* Cain contended with Abel, and rose against him in judgment, and murdered him; and in this *Field* was the *servants of God* rose against and murdered; and in this *Field* was CHRIST contended with, rose against, and murdered, and so were all his *servants*, even the *present Messenger*; for Reason (*i. e.* the devil) in this *Field*, will have dislike to and contend with the prerogative will and power of GOD and his holy spirit, raise against it in judgment, and murder it in what degree they can.

Ver.

Ver. 41. "Two women shall be grinding at the mill, " the one shall be taken, and the other left." Those *women* is the womb or seed of Faith, and womb or seed of Reason, for let it be men or women, the act and power is the same, and cause the same effect, and will bring forth the fruit: And this *mill* is the mill or wheel of Reason, where men strive and labour by their imaginary wisdom on the bare letter, for the *salvation of CHRIST*; and will *turn* and *transform* their conceivings on the letter, and *reduce* it to their liking, even as the *millstone* will reduce grain; and will alter their confidence, and say by their great wisdom, labour, and experience, "they have the true bread to eat," and set value on themselves for their conceited knowledge, preaching, contending, and self-righteousness: It may well be called a *Mill*, for Reason can, and do *turn* it about, but cannot get over it or by it, for as Reason step or move, this *wheel* move with them, and keep them in one center, which is in and under justice; and by or with this *Mill*, Reason will work and *grind* itself into death under justice, where hell will follow with it.

AGAIN, (Luke xvii.) "I tell you in that night, " there shall be two men in one bed, the one shall be " taken, and the other left." This is the *seraphic nature* which is *easy* in itself, doth not care to go into high emulation to contend, but rather abide by childish tuition, and in a manner desire to die as they were born; they believe the scripture, because they was taught it; and say *Christ* did all for them; they would hurt no one; this nature is very close to pass through this life as easy as possible; and if they should transform from one *Sect* to another, you may see their easy way, for they want or believe no *resurrection of the spirit*, above the dead letter, their imaginary thoughts with or thereon is their confidence or *Bed* where they *lay*: Now thus is the whole world bound in darkness, for they regard not *Moses* or *JESUS*, but their bare *name*; and even that to *cloak* their evil, make a *merchandize*, or bring to pass
an

an *evil* intent ; so they become *desolate* through the *abomination* of serpentine wisdom and acts ; and think to hide themselves from the wrath of God by their excuse, which is become as many high *trees* ; like unto a large rookery, that all the *fowls of the air* can make their nest and *lodge* in it, and harbour or shelter every unclean and venomous beast of the earth.

Yea, Faith hearkened to Reason, so broke its own law, and *died* according to the word of the LORD GOD : and Reason took possession and drove the *man and woman*, and drive, enslave, and *captivate* the Elect to this day : For as the Elect are born into this world with the *life* of Reason, taken under Reason's tuition, and are sent forth in, and after the desires of Reason ; they go into the *Fields* and *strong holds* of Reason, and *walk to and fro* desiring and seeking ; Why ? because they have no other life or desire, but that of Reason ; thus, are the *Elect* taken and *bound* up in those *fields* and *strong holds*, and Reason rule over and enslave them ; but this I say, *they* are preserved by the angel in justice, from doing many evils which Reason do :— Therefore when CHRIST *come* in, with, or by his Messenger ; then the *sign of the Son of man appear*, and the Elect are *called* ; then if in the *field* of generation, they must come out, and Faith will be *rose from death* to life, and *taken* into the royal priesthood to *follow Christ* ; then Reason will be much agitated, tempt, strive, and do all he can to keep you back ; but you are to be *taken* out of the *field*, and must leave all to *follow Christ*, so do not strive against HIM : And if in the *field* of wild Reason, the Elect when *called* must come out ; for these *fields* go one into another by their dark and evil acts ; and excuses are made one by or through another, like unto arms of great *trees* that grow one in and among another : So when the Elect are *called*, Reason will be troubled, and go into anger, and do all he can to prevent them ; for the devil can hardly bear to lose one from his *field* or power : But by this *new life* of

Faith that is *rose* from death, the Elect are *taken* into the royal priesthood, and made anew by the LORD GOD of *Regeneration*; and in this they find new life, wisdom, and power, and are assisted from heaven, so of consequence must leave all to *follow Christ in the Regeneration*; then what you have embraced as the delight of life, you now must *leave* behind and *overcome*; for so great is the Power of the LORD GOD of *regeneration*, and *KING of the new Heaven and Earth*, that HE can *take* them from the bonds of Reason, darkness, and death, and make them *anew* by regeneration; and bring them *through* all the powers of sin, darkness, death, hell, and justice, to his own kingdom, the glory of mercy! and leave Reason to strive and labour in its own center, which is in the bonds of sin in emulated darkness, to be swallowed up by death under justice, where hell will follow with it:—Here is *one taken and the other left*!

Again, those that strive in the kingdom of the dark spirit for salvation are called *women*, because of the fruit they will bear: But Reason has usurped the ruling power of the letter, and work on it by his *imagination*, which is the *bottomless pit*; and become such *lords* and *kings* as to teach the salvation of Christ, yet strive against and contend with each other; cry, *Lo here, and lo there is Christ*; and set up their wisdom as a standing rule, and by or with it they would *rule*, and are bound up in the emulated life of this *spirit*, that they are sure of being right, nay, cannot be wrong; whereas it is the wisdom and fruit of the *dark spirit* that act against CHRIST: Then, as I said, the Elect are born into this world with the life of Reason, go under the tuition of Reason, and is under its power, and will strive with Reason, or as Reason do, for the *salvation of Christ*; Why? because it has no other life or light but that of Reason: But when the *Voice of GOD* come, the Elect are called out, and the *Virgin daughter of Faith* is given birth from its womb or seed, and is *taken* into the royal priesthood,

priesthood, and bear a *spiritual son to Christ* in regeneration: And also there is the womb or seed of Reason, in the seed of the serpent or sons of Cain, which by or for their confidence in their worship and salvation of Christ, will bring forth *fiery Zeal*, which is the spiritual daughter of Reason, who will go into the *field* of argument, and there *walk to and fro*, gather in tradition to join with imaginations and judgment of devils: This with her queenly pride and intent will give birth to the spiritual son of *perdition*, born of her in the *field* of argument; and there will rise in judgment, and spiritually murder the *Virgin* daughter of Faith, and the *spiritual son* she bear to the LORD CHRIST: Therefore the spiritual *Virgin* daughter of Faith, or of Israel, follow *Christ* in the royal priesthood and works of Faith, become HIS *pure bride for his holy marriage*, and bear him a spiritual son for his *GLORIOUS KINGDOM!* And the *Daughter* of Reason, or of *Babylon*, is *left* in her *filthy abomination*, and by her *fornication* bring forth the spiritual son of *perdition*, who will be *ground to powder*; for the weight of sin, death, hell, and justice, will fall on them in eternity; and thus is *one taken and the other left!*

Moreover, this *seraphic* or still nature, that go not much out to contend, but rather leave others to their own will, cause peace of mind above others that do; then by this peace blended with their own righteousness and good intent, will set great value on themselves, and they *dwell under their own vine*; which is under their dark and stupid imagination;—this is a very great *strong hold* of the devil: But when the *Voice* of God come, the Elect are called out, and Faith in them risen from death to life, and regenerated to Christ, and the others *left* to be swallowed up in their own darkness by death and hell: Now I would have the Elect *understand*, all those *fields, powers, and strong holds* of Reason, go one into another, and are one of another; because the whole root and essence of them was in Cain, he being

the father of that generation; and as that increased, men went forth in desires and acts which constitute those *fields* and *powers*; and men have contended, strove with, raised up, and destroyed each other, both in, and for the *kingdoms* of the world, and in and for the kingdoms of the dark spirit: Now this is Reason for to raise against Reason; and Reason contend with Reason; dark spirit raise against dark spirit, contend with, *murder*, and destroy each other;—then, at or to those strivings and contentions *Moses* will appear, as he did to the *two Hebrews who strove together*, (Exod. ii.) But now, he will not *flee* through *fear of Pharaoh*, for he is made lord and king over Reason, and will *kill him* who do his fellow, or brother wrong.

Again, the LORD GOD OF HEAVEN raised Faith from death to life in Adam, promised HE would become a SON to his own power and redeem it, make all things anew for the salvation of his Elect; and this *Virgin* of Faith is *taken* into the royal priesthood, *i. e.* to the *mystical union and holy communion with CHRIST*; of his redemption, regeneration, and salvation; and receive the heavenly *Gifts and Graces* of his holy spirit, which assist this *Virgin* to work the works of Faith to *follow* Christ and *prophecy* of his coming:—*This*, is a *Kingdom* and power contrary to, and against Reason; so when a Messenger of Christ in *regeneration* come, then will soon appear the *field* of argument; for Reason will be angry at the voice of Faith, because it shake his kingdom and power; then he will contend with the Messenger, strive and argue against the *Will, power, and kingdom of Christ*; and enquire by and of their own Reason, and of Reason in others; say “they have the *Prophets*, Christ, and his Messengers, and have *laboured and borne the burthen*;” But when Faith is *risen*, and made its *offering*, the answer to that offering give the Elect *new LIFE! LANGUAGE! AND COUNTENANCE!* at which the *countenance* of Reason will *fall*, because the devil knows that offering has been
accepted,

accepted, and his own rejected; then in *wrath* he will enquire and argue why that should be? and thus *he walk to and fro* in this *field* of argument, till he rise in judgment and commit murder: Yea, the strivings and contentions for the *kingdoms* of the earth, and of the dark spirit, and for men to have their own will, and do their own way, is the strivings and contentions of Reason; and there *Moses* will be found with the heavy hand of *justice*: But as God become Christ, and made all things anew for his Elect, *He* also has gained power to bring in eternity; and has given power to the *internal Moses* to take the unredeemed and unregenerated into eternity: therefore in this field men strive and contend, and argue against the holy and merciful *spirit* and power of Christ in his redemption and regeneration; and his most holy *anointing Spirit*, in the holy marriage and union, to make the Elect like unto himself:—BUT Reason will come from all *fields* and places to contend with the Messenger of *Christ*, and the *prophecy* of Christ to come, and the *offering* of Faith made to Christ; and sit in judgment against Christ and his *kingdom*, and speak evil of it: And the seraphic nature will also come, and in this *field* bring forth the son of *perdition*, and become a fiery devil; for Reason will contend with the Messenger and the Elect, and would destroy them if possible; whereas they contend against *CHRIST* and his *KINGDOM*; and would destroy HIM who hath all power both in heaven and earth, who will suddenly bring in eternity, that will fall with such a mighty weight on this wicked generation, that will grind to *powder* all their hope, value, consequence, &c.; and will press them in eternity, under the second death and hell: Also the Elect will come into this *field* by the spirit of Reason, which is the daughter of men and the *first-born*; then she question the Messenger, and contend against him, and tempt the soul from him, and not to assist him, but to accompany with and assist the kingdom of darkness, so that the Messenger has not only
the

the power of Reason to stand against, but to wade through : But then the internal angel keeps the Elect from going too far ; and this eldest daughter, which is of Reason, is put away, killed, or cast out, so as not to bear the son of perdition : then they are called out, and the youngest daughter, *i. e.* the *Virgin of Faith*, will follow *CHRIST*, and bear him a son in regeneration : So in this *field* there is *one taken, and the other left.*

AGAIN, (Matt. xxiv.) "Let him which is on the house top, not come down to take any thing out of his house." This is the *house* of Reason, wherein he think to dwell secure ; and let them have riches, and power, be high in imagination or contention, which is the house *top*, and may think by his cherubical wisdom and tongue to overpower many, that his way of salvation shall pass : Now let them be of the seed of Faith, or of Reason, they have the letter to contend on and by the spirit of Reason, and no one to *separate* them, so in a manner this contention is endless : But when *CHRIST* come, then soon appear the *field* of argument, and there Reason will make war with the prerogative of God, blaspheme and murder the holy spirit of Christ, but never can invade the *Kingdon of Christ*, although he was suffered to take this : So Reason may contend with Reason, if they like so to do ; but when they argue in this *field*, it is against *Christ* who will bring on them the heavy and endless weight of eternity : Therefore he that heareth the call on this *House top*, let him not come down to take any thing out ; because all in, and of this house is of Reason, the devil, and its incumbrance which is so much, that it cannot go in at the *straight and narrow gate.*

Ver. 18. "Neither let him which is in the *field* re- turn back to take his *cloaths.*" This *field* or fields I have described, and the *cloaths* is the *Covering*, and to covey Reason in his acts, he may gather up riches that he may shine, and to make head against poverty and justice ; and may think to keep death at a distance :

This

This he cannot do, although he may strive and cover himself with excuse and contentions;—now this must be *left* behind, which is mourning and death to Reason, but Reason must die, for Faith to live and follow CHRIST; for in the royal PRIESTHOOD, Christ is HIGH PRIEST and KING, and teach and rule over his whole kingdom, which is Faith in regeneration, and of regenerated Faith: And to HIM no one can come with the filthy cloathing of Reason, so it must all be *left* behind:—Now, be careful, for seeing you was born with the life of Reason, educated by Reason, was of that house, and enjoyed its life and delight; so watch the tempter, and not go back, nor be overcome by worldly desires, cares, &c. And as man will haste from great danger to save his natural life, even so he must now haste to save his *spiritual and eternal life*! for it is very easy, and may appear delightful to go back, but a hard thing to go forward: But this *understand*, Reason, which is the *first-born*, is cast out and must die; and Faith, which is the second born, will live to inherit the KINGDOM of CHRIST! therefore in all the mighty *workings and trials* of Soul, whoever seek to *save his life* in the house of Reason, *will lose it*; and whoever *will lose his life* in the house of Reason, to follow Christ in the works of Faith, his *Life* will not only be *saved*, but crowned with an everlasting *Crown*, the GLORY OF MERCY!

Moreover, by what is written, you may see how nation is divided against nation, kingdom against kingdom, and how they rise against each other, both in and of the world, and of the dark spirit; not altogether to look at national kings and princes, but also at the strivings of Reason, in and among men: For as now the *Call is come*, he that entereth into the royal priesthood of Faith, will *see and know* those things; and will also find such *trouble*, as he never knew before, to *come out* of, and *overcome* those things; but *then*, he enter into the PROPHECY of CHRIST, that those things should

should come to pass, when the *SIGN of the SON of Man appear*, which now *is* the time! therefore the works of Faith must be looked after and done, to meet him in *holy marriage*, to have his royal *Seal*; for as I said, except he first come in holy and spiritual marriage to seal the soul for his *Glorious kingdom*, his personal coming will be of no use, for then he *knows you not*:—And what I have written of *Matt. xxiv. with other quotations concerning his coming*, is, and declares the *Sign of the SON OF MAN*, and of his *sudden* appearance in personal glory, to put an end of time, and bring in eternity; but men must enter into the royal priesthood of Faith, to *know* those signs, for they cannot be *given* to Reason, so it is only for the Elect to *know*!

AGAIN, when Jesus told his disciples *those things* should be when the son of man was *revealed*, and as a *sign of his coming*; (as Luke xvii. and as Matt. xxiv.) “And they answered and said unto him, where Lord?” and he said unto them, wheresoever the body is, “thither will the eagles be gathered together.” *Therefore*, you may see *HE is yet to come*, and that Reason will strive for, and feed upon perishing *filth*; so the *works of Faith* must be done, and the *WATCH kept* for his coming! and mind, *if the good man of the house*, which was Adam, *had known when the thief would come*, who took this world from him, worked his overthrow, and brought on him death, *he would have WATCHED*, and not have suffered him to do it; even as *sudden* will be the coming of the LORD CHRIST, to put an end of *time*, and bring in *eternity*! For as the *serpent angel* suddenly came, and by the power of *Reason* overthrew Faith, and brought on it death; even so will come the *Lord Christ* in the power and glory of *Faith*, and overthrow Reason, and bring on it the second death in all eternity: Also he that keep *watch* and work the *works* of Faith, when his *Lord* cometh in spirit *HE* will *double his portion*; therefore, *BLESSED is that servant* that is so found by his LORD, *He* will make him a ruler in
HIS

HIS household, to give them meat in due season ; and when *HE* come again and find him so doing, *HE* will make him ruler over all he hath, i. e. he will give him spiritual birth for his glorious kingdom, then he is above all the wisdom and power of Reason, for all ruling power given of *CHRIST*, is done by the wisdom of Faith : But, and if a man shall profess *Christ*, his Messenger and declaration, and after a while shall begin to draw off from the Messenger, and neglect the union and communion of the *CHURCH*, where there is given fresh beams of knowledge and divine instruction, and shall accompany with Reason, be pleased with the flowers and fruits of stupifaction, as Reason is,—there, he go the way of Reason, and in effect say, nay do say in his heart, “ the Lord delayeth his coming,” so he has time to act as do the world ;—But, the *Lord will come when he looketh not for him, and will appoint him his portion* ; for he that goeth with Reason, must go where Reason do ; then him, them, or that which tempted him, with all the excuse he can make, cannot protect him from the wrath of God, and of Christ ; for Reason is very active to lead you into the delights of his life, with the expectation of great things, and may wonder at you ; whereas he lead you into stupifaction and death, where hell will follow with it ; this, Reason do not know, but it is for you to know, therefore be careful and watch ; for the *LORD CHRIST is yet to come, and sudden will be his coming* !—NOW, mind what is written, for *HIS own prophecy* is now in act, and the signs of *HIS* coming is given ! The *SIXTH ANGEL* in regeneration has sounded on this earth, and prepared the way of the *SEVENTH* to sound ! So *HIS* own day or hour is now come ! and the *LORD CHRIST the KING OF FAITH* only reigns : Therefore I pray *HIM who is to come*, who is the *Lord God of regeneration*, and *LORD and KING of the NEW HEAVEN AND EARTH*, to enlighten and assist *HIS* Elect, and bring them through, and take them out of this den of.

evil, and to hasten his kingdom, and *come quickly*, for the CRY is, *thrust in thy sickle, and gather thy Elect*, for the powers of evil and wickedness is become so great, that the earth is *fully ripe* for its overthrow; So the Spirit say *come*, and the Bride say *come*, and the Union of Faith in regeneration say *come*; because the *Elect* cannot be released without thy coming, O BRIDE-GROOM! HUSBAND, FATHER, and KING of Faith in regeneration, and of regenerated Faith, therefore *come quickly!* Amen.

THE END.

